



This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

Usage guidelines

Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

We also ask that you:

- + *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.
- + *Refrain from automated querying* Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.
- + *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.
- + *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

About Google Book Search

Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at <http://books.google.com/>

17436.42(2)



HARVARD
COLLEGE
LIBRARY





ADVENTURES OF A GUINEA.

The Witchan Hunt's daughter confessing her guilt.

CHRYSALE;
OR THE
ADVENTURES OF A GUINEA :

Wherein are exhibited Views of

SEVERAL STRIKING SCENES ;

WITH

**INTERESTING ANECDOTES OF THE MOST NOTED PERSONS
IN EVERY RANK OF LIFE,**

THROUGH WHOSE HANDS IT HAS PASSED

BY AN ADEPT.

Charles Johnston.

———Hold the Mirror up to Nature,
To shew Vice its own Image, Virtue its own Likeness,
And the very Age and Body of the Times
Its form and Pressure.

Shakespeare.

IN THREE VOLUMES.

VOL. II.

London:

**PRINTED FOR SAMUEL RICHARDS AND CO. 3, GROCERS'-HALL
COURT, POULTRY ; AND T. MASSEN & SONS, 2, GREAT
RUSSEL STREET, BLOOMSBURY.**

1822.

17436.42 (2)

Harvard College Library

July 1, 1914

Gift of

Mrs. John E. Hudson.

5700
51-32
4.2

CHRYSA L;

OR, THE

ADVENTURES OF A GUINEA.

CHAPTER I.

Chrysal changes his service for that of an usual attendant upon the great. The history of the unfortunate glyster-pipe maker, who was like to be hanged for dirtying his fingers. An humble imitation of high life. Another change brings Chrysal into the possession of a person of an extraordinary character. Conversation between him and a very noted person. Let those laugh that win.

I WAS, by this time, so sick of *high life*, that I was very glad of being one of the number her grace gave to the messenger, as I saw no prospect of pleasure in such a service. He had no sooner received her grace's commands, than he immediately went to the office for his dispatches, where he was sent on another errand, while they were getting ready.

This was to apprehend a poor wretch who sold glyster-pipes about the streets, but being unable to get bread in his profession, had fallen upon a scheme that he imagined might raise him to the notice of the

world in the light of a state criminal ; and get his hunger well satisfied, while he should be an happy prisoner for offences which he imagined could not be attended with any bad consequences.

Big with this project he had entered into a correspondence with some person abroad, of equal consequence with himself, and to him communicated the *secret* intelligence which he daily picked up at coffee-houses, or found in the public newspapers, which his *great* friend was to forward to some *great person* in the service of the enemy.

He had long continued this trade unnoticed, as he thought, though all his letters had been opened at the post-office, but the stuff contained in them was thought below regard ; so that he began to fear that this scheme would turn to no account. But now some miscarriages in public affairs, alarming the resentment of the people, making it evident that the secrets of the nation were betrayed, this insignificant creature was thought of, and ordered to be taken into custody.

Though this was the thing which he had always proposed by his undertaking ; to keep up the farce he counterfeited the strongest terrors, and put on every appearance of conscious guilt, so far, that he had like to have over-acted his part, and fallen a sacrifice to the law, which he only meant to elude ; a just judgment on the base depravity of the soul that could descend to so iniquitous a scheme, as to trifle with his sacred duty to his country, to support an anxious, burthensome being. For his counterfeited fears not only gave weight to the appearances, which were before so very strong against him, but also made it probable that he was guilty of more

than he was at first suspected of; this justified the prosecuting him with the utmost severity, and sacrificing him to the indignant rage of the people, who called aloud for some victim, to atone for their reproachful losses.

The criminal soon perceived his error, and would have recanted all he had said; but this was not admitted him; his own confessions had confirmed the charge against him, and he was given up to the laws; to which, on the evidence of such strong appearances, though no intelligence could be proved against him, but what he showed the public authority mentioned before for, his life was declared a forfeit.

But the contemptibility of his station and behaviour proved his safety, and mercy was extended to a wretch beneath vengeance, after he had served the turn, and amused the people for his day.

I did not then stay in England, to see the event of this affair, but having learned it since my return, I thought it better to conclude the story in this place together, than to interrupt my narrative with it, at another time.

It would be doing injustice to my master, to imagine that he had profited so little by his frequent intercourse with persons in genteel life, and particularly by her grace's late example, as to think it necessary to apply the money she had given him to any other use than his own: accordingly, when he was setting out, he gave me to his wife, for the support of his family in his absence.

But this spirited lady had a politer way of thinking, than to obey his directions, or deny herself any of

the gentle pleasures of life, for the sake of such a mean, domestic duty, as the care of a family. As soon therefore as his back was turned, she put on her hat and cardinal, and posted away to one of her most intimate acquaintances, a lady who kept a chandler's shop in the neighbourhood, to advise with her, about settling a party at her house, for the next evening.

An affair of this importance required deliberation ; accordingly, after tea, they retired into the bed chamber, the parlour they sat in being open to the shop, so that they were liable to be overheard by every one who should come in, and there, over a comfortable glass of *right Hollands*, fixed upon the company, and settled the ceremonial, and fare of the entertainment. This great business being dispatched, my mistress returned home, and getting a gentleman who lodged in her house, at the expense of the state, to write cards for her, sent them by her husband's assistant to the company, to invite them to play a game at cards, and spend the next evening with her, and then proceeded to put every thing in order for their reception.

Her great anxiety, and the preparation she made, raised my curiosity not a little, to see the vanity and vice of the higher ranks of life mimicked by such a set ; but I was disappointed at that time, being paid away to a tavern-keeper, next morning for wine and brandy for the occasion.

My new master was a striking instance of the inconsistency of life, and the hypocrisy of the human heart : he had for many years kept one of the most notorious brothel-taverns in the town ; but not content with this public insult to the laws, in defiance of

every sense of shame, he at the same time professed himself a reformer of religion; and while the grossest scenes of riot and debauchery were carrying on openly in his house, was chanting hymns in a conventicle, and groaning in spirit, for the wickedness of the times, with a face as meagre and mortified as the picture of famine. I see you wonder at such a palpable contradiction; but that proceeds from ignorance of life, every view of which shows instances as gross as this; the gaming devotee, the pensioned patriot, and the drunken priest, being equally offensive to common sense and reason. As for my new master, he had as powerful motives for his conduct as the greatest of them all. Poverty made him, in his early youth, turn pander to such an house as he now kept, when the demure sanctity of his looks screened him so effectually from suspicion, that he was able to make acquaintances in families, and accomplish seductions, which no other of his trade dared to attempt. By these means, he soon acquired a sum of money sufficient to set up this house for himself; when his character immediately brought him into business that in a little time made his fortune: but, for this success he was chiefly indebted to a master-stroke of superior genius; for having observed in the mystery of his profession, that there is no private sinner like a public saint, as soon as he thus arose above the drudgery of business, and, from porter, became master of a tavern, he associated himself with a set of reformers, who went preaching up and down the town, at whose meetings he had an opportunity of finding out new faces for his best customers, and making acquaintances with the leaders, who, observing his discretion, soon admitted him into their mystery, and made his house the scene of their secret meetings, to settle their business, laugh at the follies they lived by, and prac-

tise the vices which they preached against. Such success might be thought to have satisfied his avarice, but the habit has taken such hold of him that he cannot desist, and he now does from inclination, what was at first the effect of necessity.

I should not have dwelt so long upon this character, but that it serves to explain the ways of the world, and prove the folly of an opinion, generally received among men, that they can change their course of life whenever they please; and as soon as their end is answered, and they have heaped up a fortune, by the iniquity of a profession, quit it at once, and live virtuously upon the earnings of vice.

The evening after I came into his possession, the high priest of the conventicle called upon him, to spend an hour in spiritual conversation. After examining into his progress in grace, and the increase of his faith, and assurance of election (for such is the power of custom, and the pleasure of cheating the world, that they practise the art even upon each other) he told him that he had a most particular occasion for his most private room that evening. 'For,' said he, shaking him by the hand, 'my friend as I have found by experience, that the only way to foil the devil, is at his own weapons, I have appointed *Momus* the ballad-singer, whose attack upon me has made such a noise, to meet me here this evening, and make up the affair over a glass of wine.' 'In truth,' answered my master, a good deal surprised, 'your reverence's meekness and patience must needs be very great; or you could not bear ever to mention him, in any degree of christian charity and benevolence, after so outrageous and gross an attack as he has made upon you, without the least personal provocation; for what was that to

‘him, what you said or did to the rest of the world, his morals or religion were in no danger! But you were born to be an example to the age, and a shining light to guide the steps of the faithful.’

‘A truce with this canting now, my friend,’ replied the doctor, ‘and let us talk a few words like men of the world. Your proved fidelity and prudence making me not scruple to reveal the whole mystery of the ministry to you, I will let you into the secret of this affair. You must know, then, that I have, for some time, perceived the humour of the people begin to waver greatly, and the fervency of their devotion to cool, in spite of all I could do to keep it up, by preaching, fasting, prayer, and lamentation, by crying up my own piety, and the wonderful effect of my spiritual labours; it was necessary, therefore, to have recourse to some expedient, to prevent their falling off entirely, and accordingly I pitched upon this, which has exceeded my expectations: for, instead of making my people ashamed of coming to me, it has piqued their pride, and now they resolve to show, that they scorn as much to be laughed, as preached, out of their own way. This, my friend, is the way of the world, which since we cannot in reality mend, we must only strive to make the best of. If I could carry on my business without his assistance, I most certainly would never have entered into such a confederacy, any more than you would keep a brothel and entertain whores and rogues, if you could make equal profit by any other company.’

‘I am much obliged to your reverence,’ returned my master, ‘for putting me in any degree of comparison with yourself; but it is too great an honour! I act in a low sphere; but I still have the

‘pleasure to think, that, even in my poor way, I can
‘tribute something towards your great work; as
‘there could not be so many converts to resort to
‘you for spiritual comfort, if there were no places of
‘this kind to encourage vice and debauchery. You
‘see, Sir, that I enter into the spirit of your design,
‘and deserve your confidence, by this return of mine.
‘There are secrets in all professions; and as you
‘have entered into a league with your professed
‘enemy, that you may be able to play into each
‘other’s hands, so I, notwithstanding the probity of
‘my profession, have a private understanding with
‘all the ladies of pleasure who resort to this house,
‘who, in return for their being brought into good
‘company, never fail to enhance expense, and coun-
‘tenance every imposition of false measures, false
‘charges, and a thousand others, by which a prudent
‘man turns the folly of the world to his own advan-
‘tage. As to this confederacy between you and
‘the ballad-singer, I own I never suspected the
‘least of it; and, indeed, I still am at a loss to think
‘how you could bear the personal reflections, espe-
‘cially, which he has thrown upon you. What was
‘the misfortune of your form to him, that he should
‘call you *Dr. Hunch-Back?*’ ‘Why that is true
‘enough,’ answered the doctor: ‘in that he ex-
‘ceeded my directions; and to call him to account
‘for it, is part of the business of this appointment.
‘Every thing was settled between us. We have
‘hitherto met at our friend Mrs. Brimstone’s, who
‘first negociated the affair between us, and consented
‘to take her share of the ridicule, to advance the
‘common cause. She will be here to-night, too, so
‘that we shall have an agreeable set. I believe I
‘hear him just come in. I directed him to enquire
‘for number one; do you shew him into the private
‘room, and when the coast is clear I’ll join you.’

CHAPTER II.

Chrysal's master starts at his own apparition. Interview between the doctor and a noted ballad-singer. The history of a famous ballad. All trades alike.

THE person my master was sent to meet had something so uncommon in his appearance, as instantly struck my attention. Every passion of the human heart was printed in his face so strongly, that he could at pleasure display it in all its force, while his very look and gesture turned some vice or folly into ridicule. 'You inquire for number one, Sir!' said my master, bowing with the profoundest respect. 'I do, Sir,' answered the other, returning his bow, assuming his look, and imitating his voice, in a manner that would have extorted laughter from despair, 'inquire for number one.'

Though my master was no stranger to his talents, which he had often seen him display at the expense of others, this personal application of them to himself threw him into such confusion, that, in spite of his long-practised assurance, a blush broke feebly through his unimpassioned, lifeless face, and he had scarce power to shew him into the room. The ballad-singer seeing that he had him at command, would not pursue his advantage any farther, at that time, for fear of frightening him away; but putting on the exact countenance, and mimicking the voice

and manner of the doctor, 'I am come, my friend and brother in the Lord,' said he, 'to inquire into thy spiritual estate, to give thee ghostly advice, and commune with thee, for a short space, for our mutual edification.' The surprise and manner of this address had such an effect upon my master, that he could not refrain bursting into laughter; and immediately recovered from the confusion into which the ridicule of himself had thrown him.

They were scarce seated, when the doctor entered, and addressing himself to the stranger, 'I am glad to see you, Sir,' said he, taking him by the hand, and heartily congratulate you on your success. 'You see, I was not mistaken in my judgment. I knew what would take with the taste of the public. There is nothing pleases them so much as a little profaneness, and ridicule of religion: a fling at the clergy never fails to raise a laugh.' 'I acknowledge your judgment, Sir,' answered the other, raising up his shoulders, rolling his eyes, and echoing every cadence of the doctor's voice, 'and thank you for your congratulation; but I must beg leave to differ in opinion with you, as to the cause of my success, for I have never had the least fling at the clergy, nor been guilty of profaneness, or ridiculing religion, in my ballad; the abuse of religion by hypocrisy, and making the profession of virtue a sanction for the practice of vice, were the objects of my satire; and the reception it has met with from the public, shews that the people have a proper sense of such vices.'

The doctor was so struck at the reflection of himself, when the other began to speak, that he started, in the utmost astonishment, and was unable to interrupt him till he had finished his discourse, which

else he certainly would have done, while my master stood almost convulsed with laughter. But his triumph was not long; for the ballad-singer turning short upon him, and instantaneously assuming his cadaverous appearance, and bowing in the same manner, 'And you, Sir,' continued he, addressing himself to him, 'must have had ample experience, in the course of your business, that the taste of the town inclines quite another way, the most profligate in practice being the most pious in profession.'

This sudden transition from the doctor restored him to his spirits, who in his turn could not avoid pointing with his finger, and laughing most immoderately at the silly look of my master, though he was not quite so much abashed as he had been before.

As soon as the doctor could speak, 'However I may doubt your opinion,' said he to the ballad-singer, 'I acknowledge the irresistible force of your powers of ridicule, and beg a cessation of them for a moment, till we talk of our business. I will not dispute about the cause of your success, but I think you need not have fallen upon my person. My professions and practice surely were enough, with your own exaggerations! Why, then, need you give me the opprobrious nick-name of *Hunch-Back*, which has spread so, that I shall never get rid of it? The very children haunt me with it, as I go along the streets.'

'Good heavens!' answered the other, 'how subject are the wisest men to the weakness of vanity! I should have thought that you were long since proof to any thing the world could say of you, or you would have given up your trade before now.'

‘As to my calling you this name, you must know that the whole success of our scheme depended upon it; for if I had not turned the ridicule against your person, the taste of the public is so gross, that I might have laughed alone at your opinions. But what success have you had? Do you find your flock gather upon this attack on their shepherd?’ ‘Why, pretty well,’ replied the doctor, ‘pretty well. They seem to shew a proper sense of it. As for me, I appear affected at it in a very extraordinary manner, that is solely upon your account; and to convince them and all the world of the strength of my charity, I design to-morrow to offer up prayers for your conversion, as being in a dangerous state of salvation, and then, on the merit of that, to propose a subscription for the relief of two or three families, whom your example has led into ruin.’ ‘Bravo, doctor,’ interrupted the other, ‘tell me of profaneness again! But I hope I am to have a share in the subscription, as it is to be proposed on my account; at least, you will let me assist in the distribution of it.’ ‘Take care, my friend?’ returned the doctor: ‘another word of that kind, and I declare off the connection. I will have nobody pry into my conduct, or interfere with my business. I did not ask any part of your gains, though you got so much in every company where you sung your ballad; nor did I speak a word in behalf of the other poor ballad-singers you picked up about the streets, and set to sing for you, though the wretches complained that you starved them.’

The ballad-singer, perceiving that he had touched upon a tender point, thought proper to waive it, as he did not choose to break off so advantageous a connection. ‘As to that,’ said he, ‘I did but jest.

‘ I never interfere with any man’s matters. But that’s true : I have bad news to tell you ! The clerk of the parish sent me word yesterday, that understanding I sung my ballad to a psalm-tune, he let me know, that I must change my note directly, or he would order the beadles to whip me out of the parish, if ever I presumed to sing there again ; and to mend the matter, at the same time ordered me to make use of an old, blackguard tune, which he sent me, the vulgar stupidity of which blunts the edge of the ridicule, which has never turned against the tune itself, but solely against the prostitution of it ; which can never be so effectually attacked, as by repeating the manner exactly in which it is sung. But, where is our friend, Brimstone ? I expected to have met her here.’

Just as he said this, my master was called out, where he found a venerable matron, supported by two chairmen, who inquiring in a feeble voice for number one, he directly shewed her in to the company.

CHAPTER III.

A venerable matron completes the company. The curtain lifted up, and several unexpected discoveries made. Momus plays successively upon Dr. Hunch-Back, and mother Brimstone. After various disasters, the evening is concluded in character.

THE matron, whom my master was handing in to his friends, displayed one of those figures, which lose by the most forcible description. Her face, though broken by debauchery and disease, preserved the remains of a most pleasing sweetness and beauty ; but her body was bloated by intemperance almost out of every resemblance of the human form. She wore on her head a richly laced cap, over which, half a dozen fine handkerchiefs almost concealed a piece of greasy flannel. Her gown, of the richest silk, flowed loosely round her, under a velvet cloak, lined with ermine : while her legs and feet, swoln out of all shape, and too tender to bear any ligature, were wrapped up in flannels.

My master received this amiable creature from the chairmen ; and stooping under as much as he was able to bear of the burthen of her body, assisted her to limp into the room. The contrast between her and the shabby skeleton of her supporter was so strikingly ridiculous, that the moment they appeared, Momus

burst into an immoderate fit of laughter; and turning to the doctor (who was not much less affected, though practice had given him such a mastery over the muscles of his face, that they never betrayed the passions of his heart) 'Behold,' said he, 'the blessed fruit of thy ministry, and rejoice! See how the spirit assisteth the flesh to struggle with the infirmities of nature.' And then, waddling up to her, in her own gait, 'Dear mother,' addressing himself to her, 'Give me your other arm; rest a little part of your weight, an hundred or two, upon me! Come! Let me help you into that great chair!' 'Oh! oh! oh! my poor bones!' exclaimed she. 'How you pull me along! you will tear me to pieces! Oh! oh!' 'Never fear, mother! Never fear that!' answered he. 'Crazy as your carcase is, it will stick a little longer together. Your friends are not ready for you yet.' 'Go! go! you're a wicked creature, a profane wretch. Dear doctor! I thought I should never see you more! I had a sad night of it; a most sad one, indeed. But the spirit comforted me. Oh! if it were not for the comforts of the spirit, there would be no bearing the pains of this life! I was purely when you left me! Your pious conversation had comforted my heart; and the other bottle we cracked together raised my spirits so, that I forgot all my pains. But I was not to be so happy long! Satan envied me, and threw temptation in my way! This wicked imp, and half a dozen of his roaring companions, came in upon me, just as you went out at the back-door! Well! to be sure they have a great deal to answer for! I was just beginning to read my pious exhortation you left me, when in they came, snatched the book out of my hand, and, calling for the ladies, insisted on my sitting with them; so, as you know I always loved innocent mirth, I could not

‘ refuse. But, alas! I paid dearly for it this morning! My poor bones! And then my head! My poor head is quite gone, quite gone! I can bear nothing! Oh, what a difference there is between spending an evening in edifying conversation over a sober bottle, with a pious friend or two, and these ranting riotous scenes! though they behaved so like gentlemen, and were so good company. that there was no leaving them! But, it is all folly! all vanity! I am resolved I will leave it off! I will not follow it much longer, I am resolved! I’ll wean myself from this world, and think of nothing but a new life! I hope the baronet won’t use poor Betsey ill! I did not like his refusing to taste the ratafia! I should be ruined if any thing ailed her! She is more enquired for than all the ladies in the house. And my lord—He is sweet company. But it is a pity he is so wicked! He was going to burn my book of devout exercises; and then, that profane song of your’s! what need he sing that! I wonder what pleasure people can find in profaneness! Where there is any enjoyment, it is another thing; but this is being wicked for wickedness sake. It is a great pity, for he is a very generous fine gentleman! He gave Poll ten guineas this morning! He is very fond of Poll; he always has her when Betsey is engaged. Oh! oh! oh! shall I ever get rid of these pains! When shall I be happy in heaven?—

While she was running on thus, the doctor was busied in writing a letter to himself, as from a family in distress, for whom he intended to solicit a subscription the next day from his congregation; and my master was laying glasses on the table, and drawing the corks out of several bottles; so that Momus alone attended to her, by the significant

archness of whose look it was easy to perceive, that he was laying up a fund for future entertainment, and would not have interrupted her, had she continued her discourse ever so long; but the doctor's turning to the bottle put a stop to her, and introduced a general conversation.

'I am sorry, my friend,' said he, addressing himself to her, 'to hear you complain so: I left you in a blessed temperature of mind and body last night, but I much fear that the intemperance you mentioned must have equally disturbed both. The most pious man knoweth not what folly he uttereth when he is full of wine: A little is good, and rejoiceth the heart; but too much marreth the understanding and letteth loose the secrets of the wife.' 'As for that then, dear doctor, never fear me: since the blessed hour of my *call*, I have never disclosed one secret about the matter: I never mentioned a word of it. But, doctor, what did you do with the young lady whom you would see home last night? I would not refuse you, to be sure; but I hope you have not put any more idle notions in her head: she is very young, and like to do a great deal of business, therefore her call need not come this great while! It will be time enough some years hence; I had a great deal of trouble to bring her to; and now, if you have spoiled her, I shall have all the work to do over again. Nobody knows the trouble and expense I am at for the service of the public: nobody knows! If it was not for me, gentlemen would be forced to take up with common servant-maids, and such low-lived creatures; but I provide gentlewomen for them! ladies of birth and education and yet I am not regarded; nobody thanks me: this is poor encouragement to serve the public, very poor, indeed; but virtue has its own reward,

‘that’s my comfort. I do the best I can.; and if I
‘do not receive a proper return, that is not my fault;
‘let the world answer for it: I do my part; and so
‘my mind is at ease.’

‘That you do,’ said Momus, while she stopped to drink, ‘that you do; your diligence never slackens;
‘come, fill your glass. Here’s to the reformation of
‘manners, a work that we all labour in alike.’ ‘By
‘your leave, good Sir,’ interrupted the doctor, with
a look of offended importance and tone, ‘not all
‘alike, I presume: I believe you will allow, that
‘there is some difference between your profession
‘and mine, at least.’ ‘So then,’ answered Momus,
‘you are returning to the old point: I thought I had
‘said enough to you on that head before; difference,
‘aye: that there is indeed; but perhaps you are not
‘sensible in whose favour that difference is: I sing
‘a song that makes people laugh; and put vice and
‘folly out of countenance, by shewing them in a ri-
‘diculous light, and this only for a trifling pittance
‘of that money which they devote to mere pleasure.
‘But you, by drawing horrors that never existed out
‘of your own imagination, and preaching up doc-
‘trines impossible to practice, frighten your poor
‘deluded followers out of every enjoyment of their
‘lives, and pillage them of the money that should
‘support their families and pay their debts, under
‘pretence of imaginary charities! This is the diffe-
‘rence between us.’ ‘Good lack! good lack!’ in-
terrupted the sage matron, ‘how can people be such
‘fools as to fall out thus about nothing! What sig-
‘nifies it where the difference lies, so you can both
‘do your business? It is just the same thing as if my
‘landlord here, and I, should enter into a dispute
‘about the reputation of our houses. I thought I
‘had made you both promise never to mention this

'matter any more! Come, doctor, here's prosperity to all our business, without any such foolish distinctions.'

The judgment of this mediation was too plain to admit of any dispute. The competitors filled their glasses, and, shaking hands very cordially, drank their friend's toast. 'Well, now there is some pleasure in this,' continued she, 'things are like to go on well, when all parties agree; but when some people fall out——you know the rest of the saying——But, my friend Momus, I have news for you! That story of the young lady, that you put in your ballad, has answered just as I said. The world thought it would blow me up; but I knew better; I never had a better run of company in my life than to inquire into that affair; and they all of the right sort——your secret, grave, old, rich culls, just fit to do business with. At first, I always deny it with the strongest oaths and imprecations, and rail at you for inventing such a scandalous story; but afterwards, as if I am put off my guard by the liquor, I seem to place a confidence in their professions of secrecy and friendship, and, with many tears, own the whole; that is, so far as to my having the lady in my power; and then the consequence is, that they all intreat me to let them see her (that is, singly, for such chaps always come alone); when, such is the pleasure in debauching virtue, that, besides making me a handsome present for my kindness, they leave no temptation untried to prevail upon the lady, whom they generally take to themselves upon a genteel settlement; by which means I have got a pretty sum, and have besides had an opportunity of providing for near a dozen of my women, who were too well

‘ known upon the town to do any thing in the public way ; for this kind of customers have too great a regard for their characters, ever to mix in company that might undeceive them ; so, you see, doctor, that I do not forget your instructions of doing all the good in my power ; and sure it is no small matter to rescue so many poor women, who were no longer capable of getting a genteel livelihood for themselves, from want and misery, and getting them a comfortable settlement for life, so that they have nothing to do now, but attend to you, and make their peace with heaven. Come ! here’s my service to you, my friend Momus ; and if you can think of any other story of me, that can serve your turn, and get off another ballad, never spare me ; I’ll forgive you.’ ‘ And so will I too,’ added the doctor, ‘ though he should call me a worse name than *Hunch-Back* ! Let them laugh who win. While our railing at each other in public answers our own ends, we were fools to drop it ; as to the deceit in it, it is a virtue ; for sure it is better to live thus in friendship and charity with all mankind, than to be the real enemies we seem ; and so, Sir, here’s my hearty service to you. And let us pursue our works in concert, without any more of these broils. So let us drink about, for an hour or two ; for I must leave you early, being obliged to write an exhortation for the old duchess, which I must carry her early in the morning, when she designs to visit her cousin, the colonel, who is under sentence of death in Newgate, for murder ; not that I think either that, or her preaching, will have any effect upon him ; but she will try : and I do not care to disoblige her, as she is not only a good subscriber on all occasions, but also a credit to our conventicle, which would never have risen into suc-

olic
t a
ny
E
l
'esteem with the people, if some persons of quality
'had not brought it into fashion.' 'Why, aye to be
'sure, there is a great deal in that,' added the ma-
tron, 'fashion is a powerful thing. If it was not for
'that, I could never do the business I do. But,
'since the nobility have made it a fashion to marry
'their mistresses, there is no great difficulty in
'bringing a private gentleman's daughter into our
'way of life, as it gives her the only chance she can
'possibly have, of making her fortune, and becoming
'a lady; for, as to the example of those few, who
'married ladies of virtue for mere love, it was too
'old-fashioned, and romantic, to have any influence.
'But that's true, doctor, I forgot to mention some-
'thing to you last night, that has given me great
'concern! How could you be so indiscreet as to
'accompany that highwayman to Tyburn the other
'day? And then to take his hand, and kiss it, be-
'fore all the people? Fie! it turns my stomach to
'think of it! I do not know how you can expect
'any lady will ever let you kiss her lips after such a
'filthy action. Besides, it is a scandal to all your
'congregation, that you should appear so familiar
'with such low-lived creatures, and seems a kind of
'encouragement to their crimes. If you had heard
'what remarks two or three ladies, who called at
'my house yesterday evening, made upon it; I am
'sure you would never do it again.' 'Go to, wo-
'man: go to!' answered the doctor, with a con-
temptuous look, 'take the beam out of thine own
'eye before you find fault with the mote in your
'neighbour's. What highwayman's crimes are equal
'to yours? The greatest danger of scandal that I
'ever ran has been in condescending to keep com-
pany with you. In that, indeed, I may be said,
'with too great an appearance of truth, to encourage
'the basest crimes.'

The matron, who, with all her prudence, was of a warm temper, could not brook such an insult as this, even from her spiritual guide, but catching up her glass, in the madness of her rage, which had deprived her of the power of utterance, she flung it at his head with all her strength, and with such an unlucky aim, that it felled him to the ground. 'Woman!' sputtered she, as soon as her passion permitted her to articulate a word, 'Woman! Call your women about you! I scorn your words, you canting, hypocritical, vicious wretch, who, under the appearance of sanctity and religion, cheat the credulous fools that mind you. You condescend to keep me company! you! a creature who would never have been taken notice of had it not been for me! Did not I point you out the persons proper for you to work upon? Was it not I that introduced you to those very people of quality that now make you give yourself such airs? Were they not most of them my acquaintances, and even indebted to me for the rank they now enjoy? I'll make you know yourself, you scoundrel, I will! I'll expose you to the world, and then see who will go to your conventicle, or subscribe to your sham charities! I'll make you know how to treat your superiors for the future.'

While the enraged matron thus vented her fury, Momus and my master raised the doctor from the ground, in a pickle not to be described. The glass had been thrown with such strength, that, had not his skull been of a comfortable thickness, his labours would have been at an end. However, it had made such a gash upon his temple, that he was in a moment in a gore of blood. The sight of this terrified them all: the matron fainted (or pretended to faint) away; my master ran to get a napkin to wipe off the blood, while Momus supported the doctor in

his chair; but the first sight of the wound convincing him that it was not dangerous, he resolved to increase the accident to that diversion which was the great pursuit of his life.

‘ Good heaven!’ said he, in a low voice, as if speaking to himself, and with all the appearance of distress. ‘ What will become of us all? We shall all be ruined by this unfortunate affair, even if we escape the death which inevitably awaits the wretched murderer.’—‘ O Sir!’ said the doctor, alarmed almost to despair, ‘ what do you think? Am I a dead man?’ ‘ Speak, I conjure you; give me some hopes!’—‘ Alas, my friend! I wish I could; but I must not flatter a man in your condition: if you have any concerns in this life to settle, delay not a moment. This horrid fracture in your skull threatens immediate death. Heavens! (stooping, and pretending to look earnestly) how his brain works!’—‘ O what shall I do!’ exclaimed the terrified wretch, ‘ I cannot die! I am not fit to die! Oh! that I had followed some honest trade, and never taken to this of preaching! I might then have earned honest bread as my forefathers did, and escaped this miserable death, and the more horrid fate that awaits me! What shall I do? What will become of me?’ ‘ How can I even pray to that God, whom I have so often provoked by my hypocrisy and crimes?’

My master, by this time, had wiped the wound; and seeing, that though it bled so violently, from the number of little vessels that are in that part, there was no fracture of the skull, and therefore no danger in it, ‘ Be comforted, Sir,’ said he, ‘ you have time enough to prepare yourself for death! I’ll insure you from any danger this time!’—‘ How, my dearest, best friend!’ said the doctor, catching his hand,

and kissing it in ecstasy, 'Is my life safe? Is not
' the wound mortal?' 'Mortal! no: nor even dan-
' gerous; if the surgeons do not make it so? Give
' me leave to put a plaister to it, which I always have
' in readiness in the house, in case of accidents, as
' gentlemen often quarrel for their women in their
' liquor; and I'll engage that it shall give you no fur-
' ther trouble. Many a guinea have I got by it; for,
' when any such thing happens, I immediately slip
' on a full-trimmed suit, a bag-wig, and a sword,
' which a surgeon once pawned to me for a debt of
' two guineas, and up I go, do the job, take my fee,
' and come away as good a surgeon as the best!
' Never fear, Sir; I'll insure you from this scratch.'

The consolation which this news gave the doctor is not to be expressed. He hugged and kissed his dear friend, till he made him in as bloody a condition as himself, and in the joy of his heart even forgave the cause of his fears, who had all this time counterfeited a swoon. But Momus, who saw his sport with the doctor thus cut short, soon brought her to herself; for taking a glass of brandy, as if to hold to her nose in the affected awkwardness of his hurry and confusion he spilled it all over her face, and then taking a bit of burnt paper, to try what that would do, he designedly neglected to blow it out, and so holding it to her nose, set the brandy he had spilled upon her face on fire. This instantly awoke her from her swoon. She shrieked out, when he, in the same affected confusion, flung the bason of bloody water, in which the doctor's wound had been washed, full in her face. This, indeed, quenched the flame, but then it put her in a condition as dirty and disagreeable as that of my master or the doctor; the consequence of which was, that the doctor could not refrain from bursting out a laughing. 'Well, my

'friend,' said he, taking her by the hand, 'it is but just that you should share in the effects of your own rashness. But let there be no more of it. We have both been in fault perhaps; and so let us only be more cautious for the future. What I have suffered was done by design, and had like to have been attended with dreadful consequences; your's is all accidental and trifling.'

While the doctor was thus piously making peace, my master was cleaning himself, and setting the room to rights. Momus assisted the matron to cram half a dozen napkins down her bosom, to dry the water he had bathed her with, which he performed with so well acted an anxiety and care, that even she was deceived, and attributed all that had happened to her to his confusion: and being glad to get so well off an affair that might have ended so much worse, she complied with the doctor's advances to a general reconciliation, and so all things were restored to their former harmony. As to the doctor's wound, by a ready presence of mind, he found a way to make an advantage of it, by telling his congregation next day, that he had received it from some of Momus's gang, who had attempted to assassinate him, in revenge of the contempt in which he had brought their master.

Matters being thus happily settled, the rest of the night was devoted to mirth, and concluded with a song in character by each of the company, of which Momus's was the most humorous, my master's the grossest, the matron's the loosest, and the doctor's the most daringly profane; perhaps to obliterate the remembrance of his late religious qualms. After this, the company broke up, when the doctor, having occasion for some money early in the morning, borrowed

a couple of pieces from my master, among which I was, who lent them very unwillingly, and then returned to bed to his bar-maid; for he had too genteel notions of life to marry.

CHAPTER IV.

The doctor pays a visit to an useful friend. The mystery of controversy. He waits upon her grace with a pious exhortation for her friend. Chrysal enters into the service of her grace. Her disappointment in her visit to the prison. Her grace's character.

THOUGH it was late when the company broke up, my new master, who never neglected business for pleasure, did not forget the exhortation which he was to carry to her grace the next morning. Not that he was at the trouble of composing it himself; his time was too precious to be employed so: the more important cares of his flock, which he could not entrust to any other, as visiting his great proselytes, receiving and distributing charity, and his incessant exercise of all the sacerdotal functions, scarce allowed him time for the necessary refreshments of nature, and would have been deemed an intolerable burthen, had they been enjoined by the most express revelation of the divine will, though ambition, avarice, and the pleasure of deceit, made him undertake them voluntarily; but still, to secure to himself every degree of religious merit, he kept a most laborious

author, a degraded clergyman, in constant employment, whose works he passed upon the public for his own, when he did not immediately direct them against himself.

To this learned person, therefore, he went upon the present occasion; and having him called from a night-cellar, where he was holding forth on religion and politics to a company of chairmen, he told him his business, and desired him to set about it directly. 'Good God, Sir,' said the author, 'this is a very unseasonable time to set me upon such a work. From five this morning, till eleven at night, have I laboured incessantly; and now, when I have just stepped out to take a little necessary refreshment.' 'Refreshment!' answered my master. 'Tell me not of refreshment, or any thing else! Either do my business, or say you will not! I can get enough to undertake it, and gladly too, for less than I give you.' 'That is impossible,' replied the author, 'if they are to live by it! I am sure what you give me scarce keeps me from starving!' 'Starving,' returned my master. 'So it appears indeed; when you this moment have been indulging in riot and luxury, and smell so strong of spirituous liquors, that it is offensive to sobriety to stand near you. I wonder you are not ashamed to be guilty of such intemperance: it ill becomes a man of morality and religion.' 'Sir, Sir!' interrupted the author, provoked beyond his patience. 'Have some regard to truth and reason in what you say; and look at home, before you accuse me of intemperance! I laboured the whole day, without any other refreshment, or sustenance, than a mouthful of bread and cheese, and a draught of small beer; and now have had only a quartern of gin in a pint of warm porter, to wash down half a pound of sausages, and

'you call this intemperance. If I may judge by appearances you have not spent your evening on such fare.' 'How I have spent my evening,' returned my master, who, in spite of himself, felt the justness of the reproach, 'is nothing to the purpose! I am answerable for what I do! But this manner of talking signifies nothing! I must have this exhortation by eight in the morning. It will not take you up much time! You are sufficiently practised in the style: the matter is of little consequence. If you choose to drink a glass of wine, here is half a crown, which I make you a present of. I would by no means have you stinted of any thing that is proper.' 'Sir,' answered the author, 'I am much obliged to you! I will take care that it shall be ready at the time. You are sensible that I never think much of any labour to serve you. I have finished all the pamphlets you ordered, about the ballad singer's affair! Here there are! This is a letter from you to him that lays him flat! I have quoted half the fathers of the church against him! These two are letters to you, upon the subject; one as from a great lord, the other from a reverend divine, setting forth the great benefits of your ministry and exposing the profaneness and immorality of his ballad. This here is a silly vindication of his ballad, in a letter to the author, from one of his ranting companions; and this last is an address to the public against all those irreligious and profane amusements of ballads, balls, routs, &c. This is a master-piece! You see it as from myself, if you do not choose to own it; though I do not know but it may have more weight with your enemies if it appears as from another. So you see I have worked hard to-day; and now I believe we have done with Mr. Momus and his ballad.' 'Why aye; pretty well, I believe,' said my master 'But

'hold, I have a thought just come into my head! You must know that the parson of the parish has sent for that reprobate, that Momus, and ordered him to altar the tune of his ballad, as it happened to have several of the same notes with the psalm tunes! Now, as this is known, what do you think of writing a letter to me, as from the parson setting forth what he has done, and insinuating that it was the direction of the squire? This will clench the affair! After such an authority no one will dare to say a word in its behalf: besides it will have a good look to be taken notice of by such people.' 'That is true,' answered the author, 'it will be so, and the parson's notice shall not be thrown away. I'll do it to-morrow morning, as soon as I send you the exhortation.' My master then wished him a good night, and left him to return to his company, while he himself went directly home, to prepare for the duties of the next day.

He had scarce slept off his debauch, when he was called to chaunt his matin song; after which he did not fail to display the wound in his temple, the occasion of which he promised to unfold to his congregation in the evening. This he did to raise a curiosity that should gather his whole flock, to hear so extraordinary an affair, as he designed to propose a subscription, when their passions should be warmed by such an horrid attempt upon their pastor.

By the time he had finished this first work of the day, the exhortation was brought him from the author, with which he went directly to her grace. He found her (unfashionably early as it was for a person of her rank to be even up) dressed, and waiting for him. 'Please your grace,' said he, 'here is the

‘exhortation your grace desired of me, and I pray
‘heaven it may prove successful! I am afraid I
‘have made your grace wait, but I came the moment
‘I had finished the first duties of the morning. If
‘your grace pleases, I will do myself the honour to
‘accompany your grace! Perhaps my personal
‘exhortation and prayer may have more effect! My
‘ministry has often been blessed with astonishing
‘success.’ ‘I am sensible of that, Doctor,’ answered
her grace, ‘but this unhappy man is of such a strange
‘temper, that I apprehend he might be guilty of some
‘act of rashness, that might be dangerous to your
‘person, if you were to go to him without his con-
‘sent; and that I am much afraid I shall hardly
‘obtain. No longer ago than yesterday, near as the
‘dreadful hour of his execution approaches, did I
‘find him engaged at cards with his gaoler; and
‘when I expostulated with him on the danger of
‘trifling away his few remaining moments in so idle
‘a manner (for I was apprehensive of exasperating
‘him if I spoke with greater severity) he only smiled,
‘and answered me with a passage out of some play.’
‘Yes, please your grace,’ replied my master with a
lifted eye, and a deep-fetched groan, ‘cards and
‘plays are the bane of half the world: religion is
‘quite neglected for them. The great work of refor-
‘mation will never be completed till they are utterly
‘abolished. As your grace does not think it meet
‘that I should visit this unfortunate gentleman in
‘person, I am obedient to your grace’s pleasure;
‘however, I will offer up my prayers for him; and
‘my spirit shall assist your grace’s pious endeav-
‘ours! Not that I fear what man can do unto me:
‘the angel of the Lord watcheth over me, or the stroke
‘that made this wound had given me rest from my
‘labours.’

He then displayed the mark of Mother Brimstone's rage, and told her grace so moving and circumstantial a story of his being way-laid, and being attacked by some of Momus's riotous companions, that she implicitly believed him, and sympathised in his sufferings. He then gave her the exhortation which she was to deliver to her unfortunate cousin; and seeing her uneasy at being obliged to wait till the Bank should be open, to get money to distribute among the poor wretches in the prison, he accommodated her grace with change for a twenty-pound note, having (as he told her grace) just so much about him, which he was carrying to relieve a poor industrious family in great distress.

It was a great pleasure to me that I changed my service upon this occasion, as I was heartily sick of my master; though, from a view that I took of his heart, I saw that I had not been witness to half the mystery of his iniquity.

My new mistress went directly to the prison, to her cousin, where she had a sufficient opportunity for the exertion of her charity among his unhappy fellow-prisoners, while she waited for his rising, which was not till very late, as he had sat up the whole night before, at his beloved diversion of card-playing. When at length she got admittance to him, her reception was far from being worthy of the trouble she had taken, and of the piety of her intentions. He asked her if she had procured him a pardon; and when she answered in the negative, and assured him that all such hopes were vain, he then told her that he would dispense with the continuance of her visit, and the repetition of any more, and in a manner forced her away, scarce permitting her to mention the motive of her coming, or to enforce the exhortation of my late master, which

she with difficulty persuaded him to take, though, from the manner of his receiving it, there was little probability of his ever taking the trouble to read it.

My mistress, for I had the good fortune to remain in her possession, was so shocked at this insensibility, that she went directly home, and sought relief from the solid comforts of religion, pouring out her heart in unfeigned prayer, for the conversion of him, and every other object of the divine displeasure; for though a misguided fervency of devotion had made her in some measure a dupe to the hypocritical zeal of my late master, nothing could lead her from the purest paths of true piety and virtue; nor did she suffer the extravagance of his pretended enthusiasm so far to blind her better judgment, as to make her avoid the entertainments frequented by persons of her sex and rank.

CHAPTER V.

History of a lady of fashion. Description of a rout. Chrysal changes his service for that of a lady of enterprise. A bold stroke for a husband.

SHE accordingly went that afternoon to the house of a lady of quality, where a great concourse of the best company usually assembled on set invitations, to spend the evening at the favourite amusement of cards. The lady of the house was one of those children of fortune, who rise by the means that ruin thousands. In her early youth she had sacrificed her virtue to vanity, and yielded to the loose desires of the nobleman she was now married to, over whom her humble obliging temper, and particularly her complaisant blindness to his other amours, gained her such an ascendancy, that in a fit of uncommon fondness, he made her his wife. But the method he took to secure himself the ease and conveniencies he enjoyed with her, directly overturned them; for her humility and complaisance were all feigned; and, the necessity of counterfeiting them being thus removed, she immediately assumed all the importance of her new character, and exerted the usual prerogatives of it in as high a manner as if she had never been in a meaner rank. The infatuated husband soon saw his error; but it was too late to remedy it; he therefore is forced to compound with her for the indulgence he desires, by submitting to let her gra-

tify her passion for vain pomp and expensive ceremony, under the parade of which she strives to hide her obscure original, as she attempts to obliterate the remembrance of her fall from virtue by a most rigid profession of religion. Thus, her routs are the most splendid, and difficult of access, of any in the town, no person being invited but those of the first rank, nor any who are not invited being admitted, be their rank what it will; and she professes herself a strict follower of my late master, in his most extravagant opinions, where they do not immediately interfere with her own vanity.

It is impossible to convey any notion to you of such a scene as this, to which my mistress carried me, it is so different from that sphere in which you have acted. Suppose you see several hundred people of both sexes, and of every age, dressed in all the profusion and elegance of expense, and wearing dissipation and happiness in their looks, assembled together to spend the evening in mutual entertainment. This is the face of the picture; but turn the reverse, and you shall behold a set of people who have sacrificed their real interest, and the peace of their minds, to the gratification of this and such like pleasure, and who come purely to prey upon each other: accordingly, the whole is one continued scene of sharpening, mutual distrust, envy, slander, and malevolence; the very few, who like my mistress come there for mere amusement, and are untainted with such vices, being forced to submit in seeming acquiescence to the torrent they are not able to stem.

In the course of the evening, it was my fortune often to change my service; but as the stay I made with my momentary possessors was so very short, I shall waive giving any account of them, especially as

the two most remarkable of the set, and under whom all the rest who launch out of the common road of life are in a great measure characterised, have been sufficiently described on a former occasion, though the histories I read in many of their hearts would afford much entertainment, and hasten to the lady in whose possession I left the company.

My new mistress was the young widow of a person of great distinction, who in the decline of life had overlooked the disparity of age and rank, and married her, solely to gratify his passion for her beauty. During the few years he lived, his care and prudence kept her indiscretion within bounds, but as soon as that guard was removed, she plunged into all the fashionable follies of the times, with a keenness that courted ruin.

But, though she eagerly followed every pursuit that bore the name of pleasure, vanity was the ruling passion of her heart. The rank into which her husband had lifted her placed her on a level, in point of society, with the best company, and the fortune he left her was sufficient to support that rank. But still, as there were many degrees above her, her heart pined for precedency, and she could not enjoy the honours she had, while she was obliged to give place to so many.

She had formed a variety of schemes to obtain this desired object, but still without success. At length, the very night I came into her possession, an accident suggested one to her, which she immediately put into execution, with the most sanguine hopes. There had been a nobleman of the first rank in the company, the weakness of whose reason had obliged his friends to put him under the government of a

person to whose fidelity they thought they could entrust so important a charge. As private misfortunes are always an agreeable topic for public conversation, an elderly lady, who was acquainted with this nobleman's family, entertained the company with several melancholy instances of his weakness. My mistress regarded this, only as it was meant, as common chat, till some time after, the nobleman happening to fix his eye with some earnestness upon her, a sudden thought darted into her mind, that, if she could any way bring about a marriage with him, all her dear views of ambition would be gratified at once.

The moment this thought took possession of her head, it drove out every other. She lost deal ! She revoked ! She omitted reckoning her honours ! In short, she was so absent, that she was obliged to pretend a violent headache, and leave the company. As soon as she got home she went to bed, where she spent the night in forming numberless projects for accomplishing her design ; but still the account which the old lady had given of the vigilance of the person to whose care the nobleman was entrusted disconcerted them all. At length she resolved to attempt corrupting his fidelity, as she could not expect to elude his vigilance. She had often heard that the greatest honesty was not proof against a proper price, and her knowledge of her own heart did not contradict that opinion. However, not to be too rash, nor betray her design before she had some prospect of success, she resolved to sound the person, before she applied directly to him.

Accordingly, as soon as she got up, she wrote him an anonymous letter, letting him know, that a person had a certain affair to propose to him, for his

concurrence, in which he should receive immediately a thousand guineas, and an annuity of five hundred pounds a-year, beside several other considerable advantages; and that what he was desired to do could be effected without any possible loss or danger to himself. This letter she sent by the penny-post, and desired the answer might be returned in the same manner, under a feigned direction, to the house of a person in whom she confided.

Such a letter necessarily surprised the gentleman to whom it was sent. Though the greatness of the offer convinced him that some extraordinary piece of villany was designed, yet, as he knew himself above temptation, he resolved to humour the scheme, till he should discover the whole of it, for the honest revenge of punishing a base attempt to seduce him into dishonesty. Accordingly, he answered the letter directly in such terms as he imagined would tempt the writer to be more explicit, expressing his readiness to embrace any proposal that should be so advantageous, when he should be satisfied that the person who made it was able to perform it, and worthy of his confidence.

This bait took as he desired. My mistress, whose eager imagination was too full of the desired object to let her use any caution, thought her work done, and immediately wrote him another letter, to which she signed her name, and in it explained her whole scheme of marrying the nobleman by his assistance, enforcing her former offer, by a promise of continuing him in the agency of the estate, or rather, indeed, of sharing it with him, and desiring to meet him that evening, either at her house, or any other place he pleased, to confer upon proper means of bringing it into immediate execution.

The gentleman was not a moment at a loss how to act on such an occasion ; he immediately waited upon the nobleman who was next heir to his unhappy charge, and showing both the letters, desired his directions how to act. Though this nobleman was, struck with horror at a piece of villany that did such dishonour to the sex, respect for the memory of the worthy man whose name she bore, would not permit him to expose her to public insult ; however, to prevent her making the like attempt elsewhere, he resolved to shock her, by a personal detection : accordingly, he made the gentleman write her word, that it was improper for him to be seen going to her house, but that, if she pleased, he would meet her, at eight that evening, at a certain tavern, where she should inquire for him by the name of Mr. Trueman. Such a prospect of immediate success made her blind to every appearance of deceit or danger, and, accordingly, she prepared to attend the appointment, with the most sanguine expectation.

But his lordship had prepared a reception for her which she little suspected. Shortly before the time, he went to the tavern, with the gentleman, and fixing upon a room in which there was a closet large enough for him and another nobleman, whom he took with him, left word, that if any lady should inquire for Mr. Trueman, she should be told that he was above alone, and the gentleman called down to her. As they judged, her impatience brought her rather before the time, when her imagined confederate showing her up into the room, and placing her so that every word she said might be heard in the closet, he entered into a conversation with her, on the subject of their meeting, in which he led her to repeat her whole proposal, and by starting difficulties, to enforce it with every iniquitous argument in her power.

As soon as his lordship thought she had said enough, he issued from his concealment, and, looking her full in the face, calmly thanked her for the care she was taking to preserve the noble family of his relation, which she had whimsically given as one of the reasons of her desiring this marriage. It is impossible to describe her situation at the sight of this nobleman, whom she well knew, as well as his interest in defeating her design. Astonishment, shame, and confusion, struck her motionless and dumb. She was just able to turn her eye to her betrayer, and then fell in a swoon upon the floor. Such distress naturally softened the resentment of the generous nobleman to whom she had designed such an injury: he assisted to raise her from the ground, and having with difficulty brought her to herself, instead of aggravating her distress by reproaches, mildly advised her to desist from such unjustifiable schemes, and promised her that he would take no notice of what had happened, if he found that her future conduct merited such tenderness.

This treatment had the wished effect. That false spirit, which would have borne her up against any severity, sunk before such unexpected delicacy and compassion. She melted into a flood of tears; and, unable to utter a word, fell upon her knees, and kissed the hand of the nobleman, in a rapture not to be expressed; who immediately raised her from the ground, and telling her that he imagined it must be disagreeable to her to stay there any longer, ordered a chair, and handed her to it himself, with the utmost politeness and respect.

Her situation when she got home was truly deplorable. The assurance of her late hopes doubled

the distress of her disappointment, and the fear of shame made the thought of her guilt intolerable. She cursed her own folly, the perfidy of her betrayer, and all the ways of faithless man; and, in the agony of her grief, resolved to leave this detested town next morning, and bury herself for ever from the world, in her country-seat.

This resolution she held in till next morning, when she actually set out for the country; but I have reason to believe it did not hold very long, as I have frequently seen her since in all public places, as gay and unconcerned as ever. As for me, I was given to her coachman, to pay the farrier who took care of her horses; but he thought it more necessary to give me, in payment of a debt of his own, to a man who kept a beer-house, who gave me to an attorney, to defend him against a prosecution for entertaining a gang of street-robbers, and buying their booty. By the attorney I was given, in the course of business, to a knight of the post, whose evidence was to acquit the publican. From this conscientious person, as he was on his way to a country assizes, where the lives of many depended on his good-nature, I was taken by a highwayman, who lost me that evening to a nobleman, at a horse-race.

CHAPTER VI.

Chrysal, by a natural progression, comes into the possession of a knight of industry, who brings him to a horse-race, where he has an opportunity of seeing a noble jockey practice part of the mysterious science of the turf, with other common occurrences.

IN the three or four last changes of my service there was nothing remarkable. The progression was natural, and the events common: but I must own, I was a good deal surprised at several occurrences in my present station, which were, in the proper course of things, so strange and unaccountable, that the most whimsical devil could never have thought of them, without information.

The gentleman who had acquired me so easily on the road, and brought me to the meeting, was a native of a neighbouring nation, who, on the credit of his skill in the mysterious science of chance, supported by a good stock of assurance and personal courage, had come over to make his fortune, in which design he had really so far succeeded, that he had lived for several years in the highest life, and maintained the appearance of the estate he talked of in his own country, by the sole force of his genius, the fertility of which was not confined to one resource; but, when fortune frowned upon his labours at play, was always ready to redress the effects of her

malice, by the method in which I came into his possession.

The roads had been bad that morning, which kept him a little later than usual, so that the company were at the post when he joined them. By their noise and appearance as we rode up to them, I took them for a crowd of their own servants; their dress being exactly the undress uniform of that party-coloured tribe; and every voice being exerted with the same vehemence, and in the like style of oaths and imprecations, with which those gentry receive them, at the door of a play-house or palace; so that I scarce knew how to believe my senses, when I recognised the faces of several persons of the most elevated station, and, particularly, most of those among whom I had spent the evening I described to you at the club, on my first coming to this part of the world.

As soon as the bets were made, and the noise began to subside a little, my master pressed through the mob of pickpockets, bubbles, lords, and jockies, and came up to the post just as they were preparing to start, when calling to one of the grooms, 'Well, my lord,' said he. 'Well, Jack,' replied the other, 'where have you been all day?' This was all the discourse they had time for, the horses going off that moment: but, on the strength of this my master backed his lordship deeply.

It is impossible to describe to you, who have never seen any thing of the kind, a scene of such confusion as the field was during the running, the whole mob, high and low, riding headlong from place to place, and driving against each other, without any respect to rank, or regard to safety, and roaring out their

bets, and shouting for joy, at every vicissitude in the running. At length the heat was ended, but so contrary to my master's expectation, that he lost to a noble duke who was in the secret, not only all the fruits of his morning's campaign, but a large sum, besides, more than he was able to pay him.

This was a severe stroke. He rode directly up to the post, and addressing the same groom, just as he came out of the scales, 'Sblood, my lord,' said he, 'how could you fling me so? I am quite broke 'up: his grace has touched me for five hundred; 'and the devil of the thing is, that I have been so 'torn down by a bad run of late, that I am quite out 'of cash, and have not a shilling to pay him.' 'How 'could this be?' replied the groom, 'did not I give 'you the word? But you are such a careless son of a 'bitch.' 'The word with a vengeance, (answered 'my master) you returned my well, but I have found 'it very ill.' 'Aye, I guessed it was so (added the 'groom) you were ignorant that we were smoked, and 'found it necessary to change the lay. Where the 'devil were you all this morning? Taking a ride, I 'suppose. You will never leave off, till these rides 'bring you a ride in a cart to Tyburn. But, keep out 'of his grace's way till the horses start, and we will 'bring you home, I will engage. He thinks ne has 'all the secret, but he is mistaken this bout, and shall 'pay for his entrance before we admit him to be one of 'us.' This discourse passed as they were walking together to a booth, where the groom was to rub, and settle the next heat.

You are surprised at this familiarity between my master and the groom. When he first addressed him by the title of, *my lord*, I own I thought it no more than a *cant*, which in the freedom of this intercourse,

where lords and lacquies are upon a level, is common: but what was my astonishment at a nearer view, to see that he really was the thing he was called; and that a laudable ambition of excelling in every, the meanest art, had induced him, and many others of his rank, who were riding against him, to take the place of their servant, in this fatiguing and dangerous employment; ennobling, by this condescension, the most abject and vile offices with the honours earned by the merit and virtues of their ancestors. Strange ambition, at a time when the interest and glory of their country called for their assistance!

As soon as the noble groom and my master were alone, 'Now, Jack, what think you of my little, 'stun-orse?' says his lordship. 'You must know' 'that I have measured the foot of them all in this heat, and find that I have the heels by a distance at least; but the weights are above my trim. 'However, we have a remedy for that: look at this cap,' taking one out of a chest, in which his running dress had been brought to the ground, 'this is a *leaden skull*, and weighs above two *stun*; put this on your head, the thickness of your own skull will prevent its giving you the head-ache: aye, it fits you very well. Now, I will wear this to the post, and, just before we start, complain that my cap is too wide, and borrow your's to ride in; and then, when I alight at the scales, after the heat is over, I will pull off your's as if to wipe my face, and give it you to hold, who can return me this, to weigh in, and as I wear the same trusses, stuffed with handkerchiefs, in which I carried the weight last heat, they will never suspect us. Ha, Jack, what say you to this? match me this among all your Hibernian tricks, if you can. Go your way: double

‘with his grace, and lay all you can, I’ll go with you; but be sure to meet me at the post before, and at the scales after the heat, and not to *blow* the business, by being in too great a hurry.’

I see you wonder how his lordship should put such confidence in my master, as he seemed to know him so well; but the truth was, my master’s character for courage was so well established, that it bore him through things every day of his life, unconvicted at least, if not unsuspected, for which a more timorous villain would have been pilloried: and this made the other think him the safest person to entrust with the execution of such a scheme, as no one would dare to attempt examining the cap, or prevent his reaching it to his lordship. The finesse succeeded; his lordship *beat every tail hollow*; and my master not only *cleared* with his grace, but also won considerably for himself, and his confederate besides. Things were carried on in the same genteel manner for the remainder of the meeting, at which there was a vast concourse of the best company, the weather being very favourable, the turf in choice order, and the sport very fine, and so fair that the knowing ones were all taken in; and to make the pleasure complete, though the crowd was so great, there was no unlucky accident happened, except to two of the noble grooms, one of whom was *borne down* in the *crossing* by the superior strength of a servant, who rode against him, and *slipped* his shoulder; and the other broke his neck, by his horse’s falling in the running.

It was on a sporting bet, on one of the bye matches, that I was lost that evening, to a nobleman, in whose possession I happened to remain to the end of the meeting.

CHAPTER VII.

Chrysal's master engages in a genteel amour, a delicate way of refining pleasure. His mistress persuades him that she has poisoned him and herself. His situation on hearing this. Striking proofs of medical skill, with the advantage of a regular course of practice. An exemplary instance of charity and forgiveness diverts the doctor's attention to the murderess.

AS it was late in the evening when my new master arrived in London, he resolved to indulge himself for that night, in the embraces of a tender-hearted female, whom he picked up in the street (for he was no way nice in his amours) as he walked from the inn where he alighted to his own house, in order to stretch his legs.

Nothing more than common occurrences passed upon this occasion. When his lordship had made his mistress nobly drunk by way of refining his pleasure the delicate pair went lovingly to bed together, where awaking about midnight, he was surprised to find her cold and lifeless in his arms. After some fruitless efforts to move her, he started out of bed in a fright, and called up all his servants who, perceiving that she was not actually dead, took such pains to recover her, that she at length opened her eyes, and staring wildly around her for some mo-

ments, 'Where am I?' said she, 'are these the regions of the damned? For thither only can such self-murdering wretches as I am, go.'—Then seeing his lordship, whose curiosity had brought him to the bed-side, 'and are you dead too?' continued she; wringing her hands, and weeping most passionately. 'Oh! why did I not confine my rage to myself? Why did I add your murder to my own, to plunge my soul still deeper in perdition?'

This surprised all present. The servants, who were indifferent whether it was true or false, imagined she only raved, and doubled their efforts to bring her to herself, soothing her with expressions of tenderness, and telling her she was not dead, but would soon be very well: but my master was too nearly concerned to think so coolly on the matter.—'What is that you say?' said he, trembling in horror. 'What is it you say about murder? There is no one murdered here.' 'How!' answered she, fixing her eyes eagerly upon him. 'Is it possible, that I am still alive? And that you also live? It cannot be! The poison which I swallowed this night, and in which you shared too largely, cannot have missed of its effect. But, soft! its operation now begins! that pang!—oh!—that pang bespeaks the near approach of death!—O mercy!—O cry out for mercy on your sins!'—'What poison?' interrupted he, terrified almost to distraction, 'What poison have I shared in? Speak! tell me directly, or'—'Spare your threats, my lord,' said she, with a composure in her looks and manner, that persuaded every one present she was in her senses, 'spare your threats to a wretch, whom death will soon deliver from your power; and forgive a crime that proceeded from despair. Wearied of the miseries of this life, I

‘ this night resolved to put an end to it, and for that purpose, though on another pretence, procured a dose of poison from a chymist’s apprentice, who, on giving it to me, said it was sufficient to kill twenty of the strongest men alive : and this poison did I take an opportunity to put into the last bottle of wine, when you went out of the room, determined to sacrifice one man to my revenge for the injuries I had received from the sex : though, after I had done it, my heart relented ; but you insisted on my drinking, and fear of your resentment prevented me from making a discovery, that would have saved us both from this unhappy’—At these words she fell into convulsions, so strong, that every one who saw her thought she was really in the agonies of death.

The situation of my master, at this sight, may be easily conceived. He instantly felt every pain the poison could produce ; and, falling on the floor, roared aloud in anguish of mind and body, lamenting his untimely fate, and confessing all the sins of his life to the servants who stood around him. As soon as they had raised him up, and carried him into another room, a dawn of hope arose at his finding he did not immediately die. ‘ What,’ exclaimed he, ‘ is every one combined against me ? Am I to perish for want of assistance ? Will nobody even call me a physician ? Perhaps I might yet be saved, were proper means applied ! Will nobody call me a physician ?’—On his saying this, every one was running to obey him, the sight of which threw him into new distress. ‘ O wretch that I am,’ exclaimed he, ‘ and so I am to be left alone ! to perish even for want of a drop of water ? It is not enough for some of you to go ; and not all to desert me in this base, this barbarous manner ?’—This seemed to restore

them to their senses; and accordingly, while some went to call the doctors, the rest staid to take care of him.

Where the carrion is, the crows will soon be gathered together. He was immediately surrounded by half the meagre faces of the faculty (for, as he had not named any one in particular, his servants, to shew their care, had summoned all they knew of) who taking the account he gave them of his being poisoned for truth, proceeded instantly to practice upon him every method they had ever heard of being used in such a case, in hopes that some one of them might take effect. He was cupped, bled, and blistered; vomited, clystered, and purged, in the space of two hours; the doctors sagaciously discovering new symptoms of the poison, every new remedy they tried. When they found that, beyond their expectations, he had strength enough to out-live all this, they put him into bed, and covering him up warm, to take a sweat, comforting him with hopes of his recovery, in consequence of their skill and care. While they waited *patiently* for this important crisis, some one of them happened to think of the poor murderess, who had been neglected all this time, and now lay in a swoon, the convulsions having gone off, as her strength failed. On hearing her name mentioned, his lordship, to shew his Christian charity, and prove the sincerity of the repentance and amendment which he vowed in case his life should be mercifully spared, desired that they would do something for the unhappy creature, if she was still alive. This was sufficient to attach their compassion and care. They answered with one voice, that it was a pity to let her perish without even attempting to save her, and praising his lordship's goodness, prepared to try some experiments upon her also, if only to do something for their fee.

CHAPTER VIII.

The recovery of the murderess opens a new scene. She clears up the mystery, less to the satisfaction of the doctors, than of their noble patient, who rewards her liberally for her good news; and sends them off without their errand. Reflections on some general matters. Chrysal changes his service.

THEIR practice upon this new subject, however, was cut short by a success more speedy than they desired; their first operation of bleeding bringing her directly to herself.

As soon as she perceived what had been done, and recovered strength to speak, ‘Good God,’ said she, ‘what is the meaning of this? Who can have been so inhuman as to bleed me, when it is known to be ruin in my disorder?’

‘In your disorder!’ said one of the doctors, with a contemptuous frown, ‘What disorder? Have you not poisoned yourself? And, what is still worse, his lordship also; who now lies in the same desperate condition with you, and has from his unmerited goodness directed us to take this care of you; though if we can save you from this death, it must be to suffer one more ignominious.’

'I poison myself!' interrupted she, raising herself up in the bed. 'I poison his lordship! What can you mean by this! I understand you not; and am innocent, even in thought, of any such crimes. Explain yourself, therefore; and do not sport with the misery of a wretched creature, who has more real distresses than she is able to bear, without the addition of imaginary guilt.'

This amazed them all. They stood looking at each other for some moments, wrapped in reflections, not the most pleasing, on the consequence which might attend their precipitation in treating his lordship in the manner they had done, in case what she said should prove true. At length, on her repeating her entreaties, one of them condescended to inform her of every thing that had passed, dwelling particularly on the desperate condition his lordship had been in, and the various methods they had used to relieve him.

Weak and dispirited as you must suppose her to have been, she was scarce able to refrain from laughter at this account. 'A desperate condition he must be in now, indeed,' said she, 'whatever he was in before! but, if you will give me leave to slip on my gown, and go to him, I'll soon complete his cure.'

This was a step so contrary to all rules of practice, that they could not permit it. On the contrary, one of them observing the impropriety of listening to the ravings of a person whose head must certainly be distracted by the effects of the poison, they all took the hint, and were actually going to hold her down by force, in order to proceed in their experiments

upon her, which you may think would not have been the more merciful, for what she had just said.

But she was delivered from this discipline, by the appearance of his lordship, who, on one of his servants carrying him the pleasing news of what she said, had found strength enough to run to her, and throwing himself on the bed, 'O my dearest girl!' exclaimed he, clasping his arms around her neck, 'am I not then a dead man? Tell me! tell me the truth directly! am I not a dead man?'

His haggard looks, and the bandages and flannels, in which he was wrapped all over, convinced her of the truth of what the doctors had told her he had suffered. Shocked at the thought, she held up her hands in a supplicating posture, and imploring his pardon for what she had been the involuntary cause of, informed him that she was subject to fits, which attacked her with double violence whenever she drank to any excess, as his lordship had compelled her to do that night, much, he must have been sensible, against her inclination, had she dared to refuse him; and that when she was in those fits, which lasted till the effects of the liquor went off, she was apt to rave, and speak every extravagance and inconsistency that could come into a disordered head. The manner in which she spoke left not the least room for doubt. All his fears were instantly removed, his joy at which obliterated the remembrance of every thing he had suffered in mind and body, and he not only forgave her, but also made her a handsome present, in recompense for her happy news. But his doctors met with a very different treatment. He reviled them in the severest terms, for their ignorance and presumption in putting him to such torture,

and tearing his constitution by such violent means, before they were certain of his ailment ; and without permitting them to alledge in their vindication his assertions of what he felt, and entreaties not to leave any thing unattempted, that they thought might possibly relieve him, ordered them to be turned out of doors, without giving them a farthing for all their trouble.

I have seen that you were surprised at his lordship's indelicacy, and disregard to his health, in having an amour with a creature in so low a state of infamy and wretchedness, as to walk the streets to offer herself to casual prostitution ; as well as at her expressing herself in a manner so much above her appearance and circumstances. But the least acquaintance with the world would easily account for both.

When once a woman falls from chastity, the characteristic virtue of her sex, the descent to this lowest degree of human misery is natural, and seldom, very seldom, fails to come of course. The kept mistress, who this day shines in brocade and jewels, and rattles about in her chariot, will in a few months spend the night in the streets, for want of an habitation to hide her head, and without clothes to shelter her from the inclemencies of the weather, when the novelty that first recommended her is worn off ; *for no prosperity that is not established on virtue can last.* Their's indeed, is of all the most fleeting ; the vice which is their support affecting their own conduct by example, and making them lavish profusely what they get from profusion.

Such had been the case of this female. She had been entitled by birth and education to better hopes ;

but vice had blasted all, and left her only the reflection of what she might have been, to aggravate her present wretchedness. As to him, his health possibly was in a state not worthy of regard; and for his delicacy! the indiscriminate, vague intercourse of the sexes effectually destroys that, as well as the sentimental attachment, which refines, the desire of rational beings, and distinguishes it from the gross appetite of brute animals; so that in general nothing further than the gratification of that appetite is now sought; and as that can be effected by any one object, as well as another, whether it is found in a palace or a brothel makes no difference with those who profess themselves men of pleasure. The sex is all they seek, without regard to any qualifications; and consequently, when their appetites are gratified, they desert the objects of them with the same indifference, as they took them.

But to return to my master. It was some time, as you may imagine, before he recovered the effects of this affair; but I remained not with him so long. The doctors, in revenge for the treatment they had met with, blazed it abroad, with the addition of every ridiculous circumstance they could invent. This brought all his acquaintances to have a laugh at him upon the occasion; to one of whom he *lost* me that afternoon on a bet, at a race between two of the *maggots* which they found in the nuts they cracked after dinner.

CHAPTER IX.

Chrysal's master pays his court to a great person, who seems not much to relish his humour, and expresses some unfashionable sentiments concerning polite pleasures. In the course of a regular circulation, Chrysal comes into the possession of a minister of state, who refuses a friendly offer for very odd reasons. His strange notions of some affairs.

SOME public occasion had brought a concourse more than usual in those retirements, to pay their duty to the prince that morning. As my master was one of the last who came, as soon as his devoirs were ended, some of the company accidentally asked him, what had kept him so late: on which, with an air of pleasantry, he answered aloud, that, 'He had been detained by a very whimsical affair: a certain nobleman,' said he, 'went into company last night so *immensely* drunk, that having set in to play, and lost five thousand pounds, he quite forgot it this morning, and refused to pay the money, till some person of honour, who was unconcerned in the matter, should vouch his having lost it fairly; on which it was referred to me, and sorry I am, that I was qualified to give it against him.' 'How, my lord, by being a person of honour!' says the gentleman he spoke to. 'No,' replied my master, with a significant smile; 'not so neither, but by

'being unconcerned in winning it.' And then, turning short to another, 'But have you heard the news, my lord?' said he. 'Mr. ——— caught his wife yesterday taking a serious walk in Kensington-gardens, with the gentleman whom we all know he forbade her keeping company with some time ago.' A smile of general approbation encouraged him so much, that he concluded with saying, 'He wished he had himself been the happy delinquent so taken, as he doubted not but the gravest bishop on the bench would, were he to speak his mind honestly.'

The prince had heard him without interruption; but as soon as he had ended, turning to a nobleman who stood near him, 'There can be no greater insult,' said he, with a determined look and solemn accent, 'to a person who is appointed to put the laws of a country in execution, than for any one to boast of a breach of those in his presence. For my part, if I am ever called by Providence to that station, it is my invariable resolution, that no man, how exalted soever in rank, who lives in open violation of any law, human or divine, shall ever hold employment under me, or receive countenance from me.'

This rebuke damped my master's spirits, as it struck a reverential awe into all present. He hung down his head, and in a few moments withdrew, quite abashed. But he soon recovered; and to silence the jests of his companions, and shew that he was not to be brow-beat out of his own way, he made one with them to spend the evening at a brothel-tavern, where he gave me to a pimp, who gave me to a whore, who gave me to a bully, who gave me to a pawn-broker, who gave me to a beau, who

gave me to a tavern-keeper, who paid me into the Bank, from whence I was sent, in the change of a note, to the first minister of state.

The notion I had hitherto entertained of human politics made me enter into this service with reluctance; but my prejudice was soon removed. My new master was just coming from his closet when I was delivered to him; he stopped to count the money, then putting it into his purse, and turning to a clerk, who followed him with a huge bag of papers in his hand, 'I must have all these finished against morning,' said he, 'that I may be able to read them over, before they are signed. I know there are a great many, but the business requires dispatch; and diligence and method overcome the greatest difficulties.' Saying this, he went into his drawing-room, which was filled with several of the most eminent members of the community, who came, some to consult, some to advise (for he refused not the advice of the meanest) and all to congratulate him on the success of his measures. When the business and formality of this scene were over, the company withdrew, all but one gentleman, who desired some private conversation with my master. As soon as they were alone, 'I have done myself the honour to wait upon you this morning,' said the gentleman, 'to inform you, that there is a vacancy in my borough, and to know who you would have me return; for, as I see that all your measures are evidently calculated for the good of your country, I am determined to support you.'

'I am much obliged to your good opinion,' answered my master; 'but I am resolved never to interfere in matters of this nature, nor to attempt influencing the election or vote of any person by

‘ any other means than reason : all, therefore, that I
‘ have to ask is, that you will return an honest man ;
‘ while he approves of my conduct he will certainly
‘ support me, and no longer do I wish to be
‘ supported.’

‘ What, Sir !’ replied the gentleman in astonish-
ment, ‘ not desire to have your friends returned !
‘ Why, Sir, is it possible that you can be a stranger
‘ to the intrigues that are forming against you, by a
‘ faction, who, when they had reduced the state to a
‘ mere *wreck*, like a cowardly, mutinous crew, flew
‘ in the face of their master, took the boat and made
‘ their escape to shore ; and now, when you have not
‘ only brought her safe into harbour, but also fitted
‘ her out for another voyage, with every prospect of
‘ success, are caballing to undermine, and turn you
‘ away from the helm : not that they even pretend to
‘ arraign your conduct or skill, but just that they may
‘ have the pillaging the fruits of your labours. As
‘ this, Sir, is notoriously the case, you must excuse
‘ the warmth of my honest zeal when I tell you, that
‘ I think you must be guilty of very strange, very
‘ blameable remissness, if you neglect any possible
‘ method of disappointing their pernicious designs.’

‘ My friend,’ returned my master, ‘ I am too sen-
‘ sible of the truth of all you say, but hope there is no
‘ necessity for my having recourse to methods which
‘ my soul disapproves. Without the assistance of
‘ any such did I (to pursue your mode of speech)
‘ first point out to our master, and the rest of the
‘ ship’s company, the errors in their steering, the
‘ the rocks they were ready to run upon, and the way
‘ to avoid them. Without any such did I take the
‘ helm in that dangerous time, when they fled from
‘ the wreck, and worked her out of the breakers they

‘ left her among ; and without any such will I support my place at the helm, or resign it ; for, in my opinion, no end can justify improper means.

‘ Shall I own to you, my friend, that your offer gives me pain ? Do not mistake me : I am sincerely obliged to you for that good opinion which dictated it to your honest heart ; but the truth is, that any member of the community’s having the power of making such an offer proves such a degeneracy in our constitution, as threatens its overthrow in the end. A parliament should be a representation of the people ; but how can it be said to be that, if the people are not at liberty to choose whom they please to represent them ? Besides, such a manner of *nominating* disappoints the end, as well as it destroys the essence of a parliament ; as it is too probable that the nominator shall stipulate conditions with *his* member, that may not only take away the power of his voting according to the dictates of his judgment and conscience, but also enjoin such as may be directly opposite to both, and injurious, if not destructive, to that country, which he thus *nominally* represents. A parliament, therefore, to be *free*, should be *freely* chosen, no man having it in his power to do more than give his own vote ; and such a parliament, to keep up the excellence of its nature in its first institution, should not continue longer than one session, but a new one be called as often as the occasions of the state should require it, once in every year at least, for so often does the interest of a nation demand that its guardians should meet. Such a parliament, sensible of the shortness of its duration, and nature of the tenure of their power, would take care never to act against the interest of their constituents ; or, if human frailty should err, their time would be too short to estab-

'lish the evil, and, as it would be impossible for them to be chosen again, the next parliament would remedy the mischief. Such should a British parliament be! Such I hope it will be! It is every honest Briton's duty to hope so! And not only that, but to endeavour to make it so! Nor shall any act of mine ever seem to countenance a practice that contradicts this principle. By speaking and acting in strict conformity to the dictates of *my* judgment and conscience, have I hitherto succeeded, contrary to the apprehensions of many, beyond the expectations of all; and the same means, and none other, will I ever pursue.' Heaven bless your pious intentions!' said the gentleman, taking his hand, and kissing it in a rapture, tears of joy running down his face. 'Heaven will bless them. Happy sovereign in such a servant! Happy Britain in such a guardian!' Saying this, he took his leave of *my* master, who went directly to wait upon *his*.

CHAPTER X.

Chrysal's sentiments of his master's master, who gives a remarkable reason for his approbation of his minister's measures and manner of doing business. The minister's charge to a general on appointing him to a command. Chrysal enters into the service of the general. Conflict between maternal tenderness and glory, in which the latter is triumphant. Strange advice from a mother to her son.

THE first view of this august person struck me with a reverence which I had never felt for man before. Man may be deceived in the looks of man ; but we see through all disguise, and read the real character, in the heart. Honest, benevolent, and humane, the social virtues brightened in his royal breast. 'Sire!' said my master, addressing him with the most respectful sincerity, 'here are the dispatches which you ordered me to draw up yesterday. Since I had the honour of your commands then, I have received some further intelligence that confirms the justice of your resolutions. Disappointed, but not deterred by the repulse which they justly met with from you, those people have the confidence to make a new attempt, and think to obtain by menaces what was refused to their entreaties ; but the event will convince them, that it is more difficult to a generous mind to deny the suppliant, than repulse the insolent. Strong in the natural strength of your dominions and stronger in the love of your people,

you are able to assert your own cause against all the powers of the world, on that element which nature has pointed out for the scene of your triumphs ; nor will you permit any other to interfere with you on it. All you require is a neutrality, where you are entitled to assistance. This shews your confidence in your own strength, and your contempt of them. But even this contempt will not overlook any disrespect to yourself, any partiality to your enemies. ' Let them behave themselves as friends, or profess themselves foes. This choice is indifferent to you. ' As to their complaints, their own unjust actions are the cause of them ; and, when this is removed, they will cease of course. Till then, to seek a remission of the punishment, and still persist in the crime, is an insult upon justice and mercy ; and for their ' menaces, they are beneath the notice of an answer.'

' Be it so,' replied the reverend monarch, the indignation of his honest heart flashing from his eyes, ' be it so : you speak the sentiments of my soul.'—Then turning to a favoured subject, who stood near him, ' It is a pleasure to me to transact business with this man,' continued he : ' he makes me understand him, and does not perplex my soul with a vain maze of timorous wiles, but speaks and acts with open honesty and boldness.'

The honour of this testimony warmed the heart of my master with a joy that overpaid his labours, and added new fire to the assiduity of his soul. As soon as he went home, he found a person waiting for him, whom he had appointed to meet him, on an affair of the greatest importance.

' I have sent for you, my friend,' said my master, ' on an occasion, which, I am sensible, will give joy

‘to your heart. You are to command a separate
‘body of the troops, which have been sent to prose-
‘cute this necessary and just war in America. I
‘need not put myself, nor you, to the pain of repeat-
‘ing the causes of the shameful inactivity, to give it
‘no severer name, by which this war has been drawn
‘into such a length : you know and will avoid them.
‘You will not wear out opportunity, in making un-
‘necessary preparations for improbable occasions ;
‘you will not damp the ardour of your soldiers by
‘delay, nor prolong a burthensome war, to enrich
‘yourself with the spoils of your country. You are
‘young, active, and brave : such a commander only
‘do British soldiers want, to lead them to victory.
‘You have no senior, no superior here, to restrain the
‘efforts of your spirit by timid caution ; at the same
‘time that your judgment will supply the place of
‘experience, and prevent your falling into the mis-
‘fortunes which self-sufficient, brutal rashness has
‘made so fatal to others. Your instructions are com-
‘prised in a few words.—Make the best use your
‘judgment shall direct you of the forces entrusted to
‘your command, to defend the property, and avenge
‘the wrongs of your fellow-subjects ; and to vindi-
‘cate the honour of this abused nation. I know
‘whom I speak to, and therefore I say no more.
‘Proceed, my friend, my soldier ; answer my expec-
‘tations, and you will fulfil the wishes of your
‘country.’ Saying this, he embraced him tenderly ;
and as he went with him to the door, happening to
look into the street, he saw a number of disabled sol-
diers, who had placed themselves before his window,
to solicit relief for their miseries. ‘O, my friend !’
continued he, grasping his hand, ‘behold those
‘victims of the unjust ambition of that enemy against
‘whom you go ; and let the sight add the wings of

'an eagle to your haste, to tear down a power which has been thus fatal to so many of your brave countrymen, to prevent any more from suffering the like evils, from the same cause. *The man who does not use, to the best advantage, the means entrusted to him by his country to destroy its enemies, is guilty of all the evils which those enemies may afterwards do to his country.* Shall I beg a favour of my friend? Distribute this money,' giving him a handful of guineas, 'among those men, as from yourself. If it is not enough to give each a guinea, I will be your debtor for what is wanting: if it is more, keep the residue in your hands to apply to the same use on the first occasion you meet. This much will relieve their real wants, and more might only tempt them to excess. The invidiousness of my station makes it improper for me to do even an act of virtue, which may be mistaken for ostentation. Adieu, my friend. Heaven guard you in the day of battle, and guide your sword to victory.'

I here quitted the service of this great man, the instances of whose conduct, which I have given, make any further character of him unnecessary.

The regard with which the minister had addressed himself to my present master raised my curiosity to take an immediate view of his heart, as I knew not but that I might leave his possession directly: but my fears were agreeably disappointed: for the number of guineas given to him by my master exceeding that of the objects to whom we were to be distributed, it fell to my lot to remain a little longer with him.

The honour of his new command, and the confidence with which it was entrusted to him, warmed

his heart with the most exalted joy. He executed his charitable commission, and then went directly home, where, bending his knee to his beloved mother, and kissing her hand in rapture, 'O, madam!' said he, 'congratulate your happy son. My prayers at length are heard; and I am blessed with an opportunity of proving to the world my attachment to the service, my ardour for the glory of my country. I am honoured with the separate command in America, where Heaven fires my soul with an assurance, that I shall have the happiness of crushing the injurious power of our enemies in the very place where it first attacked my country; where it has too long triumphed in its wrongs.'

'Heaven bless my son!' replied the matron, as soon as a gush of tears of joy and tenderness permitted her to speak. 'Heaven guard my son! and bless his pious hopes. Let me only live to see him return with the honour of having done his duty, and I shall die contented. But why do I say this, as if my heart felt a doubt for him? My son will never fail to do his duty; he will never fall from the paths of honour, however dangerous, nor seek to colour over with specious arguments the loss of his honour. He will not make his mother ashamed of having borne him, nor bring her grey hairs with disgrace and sorrow to the grave. I know the instructions which have formed his youth: I know the principles of his heart: I know my own blood better. But, O my son! remember also, that prudence distinguishes true courage from rashness; that your country has now a peculiar interest in your life: and that you betray its trust, if you loose it by any unnecessary boldness. Remember your aged mother, who hangs weeping over her grave till you return. Remember your——'

‘ Oh, my mother, no more! Recal not ideas, which my present situation requires me to forget. Fear not, your son will not be a disgrace to the honest race from which he is sprung. He will do his duty as a soldier, a British soldier, and as a man sensible of the obligations of reason and religion. Whether I shall ever have the happiness of kissing this hand again is only known to heaven ; but it is in my power to promise, that the name of your son shall never raise a blush in the face of his mother, nor his actions require the palliation of excuse from his friends. If life is to be short, let it be well filled : one day of glory is better than an age of idleness or dishonour. Adieu, my mother ; your blessing is a shield to the head, a support to the soul of your son ; one tender parting more, and then my heart must be resigned to other cares.’ ‘ Heaven bless, heaven guard my son!’ And then, as he went from her, ‘ O glory, what a tribute dost thou expect from wretched mortals !’

My master paused a moment to wipe away the pious tear which filial duty owed to such a parting, and then hastened to another scene of equal tenderness.

Mutual merit had improved the instinctive liking of youth between my master and a young lady, whose elevated rank and large fortune were her least recommendations, into the strongest attachment of real love. As reason could make no objection on either side, parental approbation gave its sanction to their happy choice, and had encouraged virgin timidity to appoint the day that was to seal their bliss. Hard task upon a favoured lover to communicate to the chosen of his soul the order which was to damp rising expectation, by this delay ; and tear him from the instant hope of that happiness which he had so

long been suing for. But honour, and the service of his country, demanded this fiery trial, to prepare him for that height of glory to which his soul aspired.

CHAPTER XI.

Another scene of tenderness. Love and honour in the old-fashioned, romantic style. Chrysal quits the service of the general, and, after some few common changes, enters into that of honest Aminadab. Conclusion of Aminadab's agency for her grace.

AS soon as he had recovered from the softness into which his mother's tenderness had melted him, he went directly to his mistress. She received him with the freedom proper in their present situation, but soon perceived an alteration in his countenance, that shewed her his heart was not at ease. This alarmed her tender fears: 'What!' said she, looking earnestly at him, 'can make a troubled gloom overcast that face, where hopes and happiness have, for some time, brightened every smile? Can any thing have happened to disturb the prospect so pleasing to us? Can you feel a grief that you think me unworthy or unable to share with you? It must be so: that faint, that laboured smile betrays the sickness of your heart.'

'O dearest wish of that heart,' replied he, taking her hand, and kissing it in ecstasy, 'how shall I merit such perfection! It is impossible: I am un-

worthy : but let my soul thank heaven for blessing it with this opportunity of rising nearer to a level with your virtues ; a hope that will soften the severity of absence, and make the delay of happiness seem shorter.'

What canst thou mean,' said she, a jealous doubt alarming her delicacy. ' Delay !—I understand thee not !—I urge not.'—' Mistake not, O my love, the inconsistencies which anguish extorts from my bleeding heart. How can I say it ! Our happiness is delayed ; delayed but to be more exalted. Honour, the service of my country, call.'—' And am I to be left ?'—' But for a time, a little time, the pain of which shall be overpaid by the joy of meeting never to part again. O spare my heart, restrain those tears ; I am not worthy, I am not proof to such a trial. The interest, the glory of my country demand my service, and my gracious master has honoured me with a station ; in which my endeavours may be effectual to accomplish his commands : nay, must be effectual, where love urges duty, where you are the inestimable reward.'—' If that reward is all you seek, why do you fly from it ? My fortune is amply sufficient : quit then the dangerous paths of ambition, and let us retire, and seek true happiness in content.'—' O spare my struggling heart. What can, what shall I do ! The trial is too great for human fortitude ? Assist me, glory !—help. O my country ! support me through this conflict, and I shall triumph over every other difficulty and danger. I go, my love, but to deserve thee.'—' Go ! go ! and heaven guide and guard your steps !' waving her hand, and turning from him to hide her tears. ' I shall no longer struggle with the sacred impulse that leads you on to glory.' Then turning to him, ' But remember how you leave me : think

'what I feel till you return! What must I be, should—'

The horror of this thought made her unable to say more: he flew into her arms, and mingling his tears with her's, as her head reclined upon his bosom, in the tenderness of a chaste embrace, 'This is too much,' said he, 'this is too much! I never can repay this excess of goodness.' Then breaking from her arms, in a kind of enthusiasm, 'Heaven gives my soul,' continued he, 'this foretaste of happiness, as an earnest of success: I go to certain victory: the prayers of angels must prevail.' Saying these words, he rushed out of the room, leaving her half dead with grief. Nor was he in a much happier state: the thought of parting from her damping the ardour that had enabled him to give that proof of his resolution, and obliging nature to pay the tribute of a flood of tears to such a sacrifice.

But glory and the interest of his country soon dissipated this cloud; and his mind, freed from the dread of such painful scenes of tenderness, resumed its wonted vigour, and entered upon the cares of his great undertaking with the most indefatigable assiduity. But I continued not in his possession to see the effects of these cares; such objects as I was designed for occurred too frequently, to the first of whom it fell to my lot to be given. I told you that I took a view of his heart. Never was honour more firmly established on the principles of virtue than there. To select any one instance would be injustice to the rest. All was uniformly great and good.

'My next master was one of the pillars of military glory, who had contributed a leg, an arm, and the scalp of his head to raise the trophies of the French

in America. Though he was destitute of almost every comfort which nature really stands in need of, his first care, on the acquisition of such a treasure as I was to him, was to gratify the artificial wants of luxury. He went directly to a gin-shop, where he changed me for a quartern of that liquid fire; the taste of which was too pleasing to his palate, and the warmth too comfortable to his heart, for him to be satisfied with so little. Quartern followed quartern, till every sense was intoxicated, and he fell dead drunk on the floor, when his good-natured host had him kindly laid, to sleep off his debauch, on the next dunghill, first taking care to prevent his fellow inhabitants of the streets from robbing him of the rest of his treasure, by picking his pocket of it himself. The scenes I saw in this service were all of the same kind, but I was soon relieved from the pain of them, my master giving me as a present to an officer of the custom that very night. By this faithful steward of the public, I was next morning given to the factor of a gang of smugglers, to be laid out for him in lace in Flanders, whither he was just going on the affairs of his profession. With this industrious trader I went as far as Harwich, where while they waited for the tide, he lost me, at a game of cribbage, to a person who was going over with him.

My new master was honest Aminadab, her grace's agent, whom I have mentioned to you before. As soon as they had done playing, my master took a walk upon the beach with a person who strongly resembled him, and whom I found to be his son. 'I wish,' said the father, 'that we were safe at our journey's end; for, though I have planned matters so well that I think there can be no danger, the immense consequence at stake must make me anxious.' 'I do not understand you,' replied the

son : ' I thought this was but such a journey as I have often known you take, and that you were going no farther than Holland, on some business of her grace's.' ' She thinks so indeed,' returned the father, ' nor would I have her think otherwise as yet : but I do not design ever to see her face more. I am now, my son, arrived at the height of my wishes, being possessed of wealth beyond my most sanguine hopes. For you must know, that having gained the confidence of this woman by many services, I at length suggested it to her, that the best way for her to make the most profit of the great wealth she had amassed, would be to send it to Holland, by some trusty person, who should bring it over again from thence, to save appearances, and subscribe it here, in some fictitious name, to the supplies given for the defence of Germany, now that her's, and the intrigues of some other great persons, had baffled the schemes of economy which the managers had attempted in vain to establish, and obliged them to come into our own terms. She took the hint, for it was a most plausible one, and immediately insisted that I should negotiate the affair for her, giving me one hundred thousand pounds for that purpose.

' This was what I wanted, and had been always scheming for, having ever remitted my money, as fast as I could make any, into Holland, that I might be able to seize such an happy opportunity as this, at a moment's warning.' ' But you cannot think, father, of staying in Holland. You will be immediately pursued thither.' ' In Holland, fool ! no, nor in the smoke of Europe at all. I design to set out for Africa without a moment's loss ; and hope to be far enough out of her reach, or that of any Christian power, before she can suspect any thing of my flight. And it will heighten the plea-

‘ sure of my success, to think, that while I am
‘ to a land of circumcision, she will sit in
‘ expectation of my return.’ ‘ But, father,
‘ injustice to deceive her confidence, and re
‘ so great a sum of money ?’

‘ Injustice, fool !—injustice to a Christian
‘ such another word and I discard you, discl
‘ for ever ! Thy converse with these Gen
‘ debauched thy faith. For what do we n
‘ them, for what do we serve them, for w
‘ their abominations and their insults, but
‘ them to our own advantage ? Fools ! v
‘ sumptuous fools ! to imagine that any bene
‘ gratitude can bind us to them ; or change th
‘ hatred of our souls to a sect that has been t
‘ of our dispersion and ruin. But, to sil
‘ weak scruples about injustice with a word
‘ not the authority of our holy scripture, the
‘ of our great prophet Moses himself, for wh
‘ who borrowed the wealth of the Egyptians
‘ a design of ever returning it, to pay the ch
‘ Israel for the labour they had been put to
‘ oppressors, and enrich them when they
‘ arrive at the land of promise ? And is no
‘ case ? Have I not laboured hourly for this
‘ woman without payment ? Did she not
‘ defraud our people of a greater sum than
‘ which my mite was added too, under the
‘ of procuring us a settlement ! And did
‘ refuse to return it when the attempt failed
‘ cess ! What then is this but a just retali
‘ fulfilling of our law, that says, “ An e
‘ eye, and a tooth for a tooth ?” And do I
‘ her wealth to make my settlement happy
‘ land of my forefathers ?’

The son had too high a reverence for the judgment of his father, to offer any reply, but yielded to the conviction of arguments so conclusive. By this time the wind and tide served for us : we arrived in Holland without any thing remarkable. I should, however, mention to you the sordid hypocrisy of my master, who, not to violate the custom of his race, made a pretence of poverty, to get his passage without expense.

CHAPTER XII.

They arrive at the Hague. Political conversation between a Dutchman and a Jew. They differ in opinion. Aminadab leaves his friend Van Hogan in great distress.

AS soon as he arrived at the Hague, my master set his son to prepare for their immediate departure, while he went himself, for a moment, to speak to one of the principal members of the States.

There was little ceremony between a Dutchman and a Jew, but entering directly upon business, 'My friend, Aminadab,' said his Mightiness, 'I am glad to see you : I hope you have brought us good news ; and that there is a stop put to the insolence of those English pirates, who, in a manner, block up our ports, and have almost ruined our trade.'

‘ Really, my friend Van Hogan,’ replied my master, ‘ I am sorry that I cannot give you any satisfactory account of that affair; for such is the perverseness of people in power there at present, that they will not listen to any arguments.’ ‘ Will they not take money?’ ‘ No, indeed; nor does the boldest of us all know how to offer it with safety, it was rejected with such indignant rage the last time; though indeed the offer was a tempting one. I have seen the day, and that not very long since, when half the sum would have done twice as much. But matters are most strangely altered of late. They have got a manager, who neither drinks nor games, keeps running horses nor whores, nor lives above his private fortune, and therefore has not such pressing demands for money, as used to make our negociators go on so smoothly with others formerly.’

‘ Death! what shall we do? Is the whole court corrupted by this example? Are they all infected with such a strange madness?’ ‘ No, it is not gone so far as that yet, and it is to be hoped that the example of a few will not be able to do so much; and that, when the novelty of this humour wears off a little, it will go out of fashion insensibly, and things return to their old course. This is supposing the worst, that the engines now at work to overturn this new *set* should miscarry.’

‘ But what must we do in the mean time? We shall be ruined before that may happen. We must declare war, and do ourselves justice.’ ‘ But may not the remedy there be worse than the disease?’ ‘ Are your affairs in such a condition as to entitle you to take such a step? Consider what a mighty

naval force they have at this time! Consider how 'you will be able to resist it.' 'That is the thing, the only thing, that has kept us quiet so long! But something must be done; another *Amboyna* affair, or some such stroke, must bring us satisfaction, and revenge too.' 'Take care, my friend; be cautious what you do: this is no time for such strokes; nor are the present governors such people as those who suffered them so tamely: they will be apt to return the stroke, in a manner that they may be attended with consequences too dreadful to be hazarded. I hate those haughty islanders as much as you; except some few particulars, the sense of the whole nation has ever been against us; nor would they suffer us among them now, but that we have availed ourselves so well of the favour of those few, as to get the command of almost all the money in the kingdom into our own hands, so that now they dare not provoke us too far; though I own, I do suspect that the design of the present rulers is to get out of our power as soon as this war is over, if our old friends do not counteract their designs.'— 'But all this time this talking signifies nothing to our affairs; what do they say to them? What reasons do they give for encouraging these outrages, in breach of treaties, and contempt of justice?'

In truth, my friend, a great many, that are more just than agreeable; more easily exclaimed against than refuted. In answer to your alledging the faith of treaties, they insist, that they strictly observe the sense and spirit of them, while you only cavil about the words, it being absurd to think, that any nation should bind up its own hands in the manner you pretend; or, even if that was the meaning of the treaty, at the time when it was made, that your abuse of the indulgence given by it makes it neces

sary to retract it now : and they express the most indignant surprise at your insisting so strongly upon one article, which, at best, is but doubtful, and would be in itself absurd, in the sense you wrest it to, while you break through so many, the meaning of which you do not even pretend to dispute.'—Then we will dispute no longer about them ; we will enforce their observation by the same methods that originally obtained them.'—' Aye, if that could be ; but, my friend, I cannot flatter you ; I am afraid those means are out of your power ; you were then really *mighty states*, respectable for your power, and dreadful for your valour : but the case is now altered—I need not say how.'—' Ungrateful English ! to forget how we rescued them from popery and slavery, but the other day ; had it not been for us, they, would, at best, have been but slaves to France.'—' The very charge they make against you ; who, they say, could never have resisted the power of Spain, or established your liberties, if their queen Elizabeth had not hearkened to the cries of *your poor, distressed states*. As for the affair you mention, though they do not deny the benefit, they take off from the obligation, by attributing it to self-interested motives, as, they say, you were convinced that, if any thing happened to them, you must sink of course ; besides, that you have been amply paid for this, by the immense expense of blood and treasure with which they established your barrier in the late wars, which they evidently entered into on your account, to the neglect of their own interest.—In a word, my friend, there is so much truth in what they say, that I would not advise you to insist upon these points any more.'—' Confound the points ! and the memories that rip them up so ! What shall we do ? I myself lost a ship last week, worth fifty thousand ducats ; though

'all the precautions possible were taken, as sending her papers by another ship, supplying her with false bills of lading, false clearances, false consignments, in short, every thing that human art could devise.'—
'And I know she was as well sworn for, to prevent her being condemned, as human conscience could swear; but nothing could elude the captors, or deceive or influence the judges;' 'But was she not insured?'
'Not a ducat; there is nothing to be got by insuring, except the ships are to be cast away. O my ship! my ship! I will have war.'—'And then all your ships go at once.'—'I am distracted! what shall we do?'—'My friend, the best, the only advice I can give you, is to put a stop to this trade, and open your eyes to your true interest. I hate the English as much as you possibly can; but that should not make me ruin myself to be revenged on them: they are your only natural allies; they first delivered, they still sustain you, nor can you support the very name of an independent state without them. Provoke them not, therefore, too far; I wonder how they have borne so much already; preserve a fair neutrality; they despise your assistance, and desire no more: nor, by your avarice, force them to measures that must end in your ruin. If you break with them, to whom will you apply? The French have given you many proofs, that they only wait for an opportunity to enslave you: Spain has at length learned its own interest, and will not break with the only power whose friendship can be of real service to it: and this very war gives a sufficient demonstration of Austrian faith and gratitude.

'This is the obvious situation of things, and must strike a person at the first view: but a moment's thought will show them even in a stronger light. For, to grant that France and Austria both may be

‘ sincere in their professions to you, does not reason
‘ show you the imprudence of trusting to promises,
‘ which it is more than probable they will not be able
‘ to perform? For, if you would but divest yourself
‘ of passion and prejudice for a moment, you would
‘ see that the measures entered upon, and the means
‘ used to carry them on by the English, at this time,
‘ must, in all human appearance, disappoint the
‘ schemes of their enemies, and retort, upon their
‘ own heads, the ruin they meditated for others. In-
‘ deed the prospect is such, that it is impossible to
‘ say where things will end: every interior fund is
‘ exhausted; every external resource cut off; their
‘ own trade is absolutely ruined, the treasures of
‘ Spain, which supplied them in their last wars, are
‘ no longer at their command, so that I can foresee
‘ nothing less than their becoming bankrupts, not
‘ only to themselves, but also to every foreign state
‘ and individual, whose avarice of present gain has
‘ made them supply their wants.

‘ Nor is this distress the effect of chance, or of an
‘ unfortunate campaign, which the success of another,
‘ or some lucky hit, may restore: it is the natural
‘ consequence of a system of measures, planned with
‘ judgment, and prosecuted with vigour, by a minister
‘ who will not fail to improve it to the most solid
‘ advantage, and this, I say, not solely from my own
‘ opinion. You know I have had connections with
‘ persons able to give me the best information, by the
‘ assistance of which I have traced the progress of
‘ these affairs with astonishment: and therefore as
‘ England has thus at length shewn a superiority in
‘ council, the usual resource of patching up a good
‘ peace at the end of an unsuccessful war, seems also
‘ to be precluded from them. As for the house of
‘ Austria, it has ever been a dead weight upon its

' friends; though its infatuated ingratitude to England, which has been in a manner its sole support for near a century, will, probably, prevent any other state from undertaking such a burthen, so that it must sink back into its original obscurity and barbarism. Thus you see, my friend, that depending upon France is leaning on a broken reed; and trusting to Austria, going for shelter under a falling wall. What, then, can you do, if the English should take offence at your behaviour, and exert that power which is in their hands, to punish your avaricious partiality to their enemies. !

' Your power is, in every instance, contemptible; your navy is gone absolutely to decay; your land forces are filled with old men and children; your officers who might have served you, have been obliged to enter into other services for bread, to make room for ignorant, indolent, pusillanimous burghers, who barter their votes for such a share of the spoils of the public. Your finances are in the lowest state of embarrassment; your public spirit, your valour, your virtue, all swallowed up by selfishness, and sordid love of gain; every thing in the situation that seems to invite ruin, if it is not speedily prevented, and that can possibly be done no other way than as I have mentioned; for, as I have said, and must again repeat, things are now on a footing there that you do not seem to be properly aware of. The people are sensible of their own strength; governors exert it properly; and there is a mutual confidence between them, that in a manner ensures success to their attempts. Consider this fair, this friendly representation of real facts, and you will soon see the improbability of their bearing with you any longer; or suffering you to defeat the ends of their military efforts, by

‘carrying on the trade of their enemies, and so
‘enabling them to continue the war.’

‘Is it come to this? Are the friends on whom we
‘depended most turned against us? Are you an
‘advocate for our enemies, and would persuade us
‘to give up the most advantageous branch of trade
‘we have?’ ‘Why will you let your passion blind
‘you thus? I have told you before, and I repeat it
‘again, that of all Christians I hate the English most,
‘because they resemble us least; as I love the Dutch
‘most, as you come nearest to ourselves both in
‘practice and profession. But *my* passions never
‘blind *me*: and therefore I speak the dictates of
‘reason. I plead not for them, nor will I flatter you.’
‘Notwithstanding all their boasted power, we have
‘one stroke left to humble them, and we will make
‘it directly; we will draw all our money out of their
‘funds.’ ‘Will you so, at a third part loss? Oh,
‘Moses! what fools are those Christians? Do you
‘not see that even this stroke, as you call it, is
‘guarded against! that, apprehensive of such an
‘attempt, they have lowered the particular funds, in
‘which your money chiefly lies, so far, that the loss
‘of selling out now would be intolerable. And whose
‘is this money which you would draw out? The pro-
‘perty of private people! Absurd thought! If it
‘was the money of the public, it would not be
‘strange to see it sacrificed to private interest; but
‘there is no instance in all your story, of private pro-
‘perty being given up voluntarily for the redress of
‘public wrongs.

‘Friend Hogan, I am in haste; my affairs call
‘me elsewhere. When I shall see you again is
‘uncertain; but my regard would not permit me to
‘miss this opportunity of giving you my advice,

' which I know to be of importance to you. I can no longer undertake your affairs in London; nor would I have another amuse you with hopes that must deceive you in the end. While it was in my power to serve you, I did; I abused their confidence, I betrayed their secrets to you: but I can do it no longer, nor can any other to effect. Measures, as well as men, are changed. Adieu.' With these words my master went to seek his son, leaving his friend Van Hogan in the highest distraction, between the opposite impulses of the strongest passions that could agitate his soul, avarice and fear.

CHAPTER XIII.

Aminadab bids adieu to her grace, and sails with his son for Africa. Chrysal remains with a Dutch banker. The principles and conscience of a good Dutchman. Chrysal is sent into Germany. His opinion of the Dutch.

THE young Israelite met his father punctually, and gave him such an account of his preparations for their flight, that Aminadab blessed the God of his fathers; and to complete the fullness of his harvest with whatever gleanings he could pick up, he went directly among his Dutch friends, and, in pious imitation of the example he had quoted before, borrowed, if not jewels of gold and jewels of silver, as much coined

gold and silver as he could, and then going with his son to the sea-side, they embarked for their native country, in all the exultation of successful villany.

But I went not with them : my British shape being of more value in Europe than where he was going, my master left me with his banker, in exchange for the more fashionable coin of Spain, which neighbourhood made better known there. My Hebrew master had scarce left the banker, into whose hands he had given me, when in came his Belgic friend, Van Hogan, all aghast at the news he had received from him, and something else; which had come to his knowledge since.

‘ O, Mynheer!’ said he, ‘ we are all blown up and undone! The flood is pouring in upon us.’ ‘ What is the matter now, Mynheer,’ replied the banker, ‘ that throws you into this strange consternation!’ ‘ The worms have not destroyed the dams! nor an earthquake swallowed up the Spice islands?’

‘ Worse, worse, if possible, than even these! Those stubborn, proud, self-sufficient English have refused to release our ships that were taken carrying ammunition and provision to their enemies, so that we are like not only to lose those ships, but also the advantage of the trade for the future. What can be done to avert this blow?’ ‘ Really, Mynheer, I cannot tell : the case is bad enough, to be sure; but it is no more than was to be expected; it was not to be thought that they would always remain such passive fools as tamely to look on, while we supplied their enemies with necessaries to carry on the war against them, without endeavouring to put a stop to us.’

ath! I am almost mad to hear you talk thus! say what you will, my province shall never bear Why, I have received advice this minute, that all our ships, which were freighted for their enemies will be condemned; and that they are as little d at our menaces as they were at our enemies. If this continues, we shall not have a ship in the Texel.'

y, mine shall escape, I am resolved.'—'What you do to save them?'—'Not run them into anger, Mynheer.'—'How, give up the trade?'—'Lost certainly, since it cannot be carried on with any longer, and glad that I have come off so.'—'I do not understand you?'—'You are too sanguine, Mynheer; too sanguine in the pursuit of projects. While the surprise or fright of the managers in England gave me reason to think they would not venture to interrupt us, I carried on as large a trade in this way as any other: as soon as I saw the people recover their senses, the reins put into other hands, I made a timely retreat with what I had acquired.'—'And what do you intend to do now?'—'Keep fair with those as I can get nothing by breaking with, and turn my business into another channel; by which experiment I have already succeeded so far, that we've got the British remittances to the parties engaged in the present war.'—'Why, there may be something in this; and, if one scheme fails, I believe I will even follow your example.'—'And pray what is that, Mynheer?'—'No more than the old method of piracy; but this is so laid, that it can hardly fail of success: we have bribed the captain of an English privateer to rifle a ship that we prepare for the purpose, and then to come into the way of our men of war, which is to take him and

'bring him in, where he is to insult the government
'and vindicate his outrages on the pretence of
'authority.'

'And pray, Mynheer, what can you propose from
'all this, beside having the foolish villain hanged ?

'Why the English, in detestation of such villany,
'will give up the point of searching our ships, when
'they see their authority abused in such a manner,
'and so we shall gain our end that way ; or, if they
'do not, our own people will be so enraged at the
'insult and injustice, (as they will believe) of their
'proceeding, that they will immediately declare war
'against them ; and so we shall obtain it the other.
'The pirate, when he has served our turn, we are to
'let escape ; and it will be no great loss to the
'world, if half a score of his crew are hanged.'

'A very just and public-spirited scheme indeed !
'to hang wretches for a crime you hire them to com-
'mit, and engage your country in a war that must be
'its ruin, to support your pretensions to an unjusti-
'fiable trade.'

'Mynheer Van Hogan, I am a Dutchman as well
'as you, and attached to my interest, as every Dutch-
'man is ; but that is, when *my* interest is not destruc-
'tive of itself in the end, as I must tell you I think
'your present scheme is, in which I will be no farther
'concerned, than to try to prevent the evil conse-
'quences of it to the state : the rest may lie upon
'your own head.

'Any thing in the way of trade my conscience
'complies with without scruple ; I can take every
'oath that every officer of the custom^a can impose,

'and not think myself bound by any of them, further than they agree with my interest ; I can supply the enemies of my country with arms to fight against ourselves, provided they pay a price extraordinary, that will defray my taxes towards the support of the war ; I can receive circumcision, stroke down my beard, and swear by Mahomet, to avoid a tax at Smyrna ; I can trample upon the cross, deny Christ, and call myself a Dutchman, to obtain leave to trade in Japan ; but I will not cut the dykes to drown a rat at home.

'I am not at leisure to say more on this subject, as I am this minute going to remit a subsidy to one of the German princes, whom England keeps in pay, to fight for their own preservation, from the same principles that it has long fought our battles, and would again, if we did not provoke it too far. And when this is done, I am to meet the French ambassador, to settle terms with him, for remitting the money that is to pay the army which fights against the allies of England. So that you see I am engaged, as you may be, if your warmth, unnatural to the cool temper of your country, will let you open your eyes to your true interest.'

Mynbeer Van Hogan departed rather silenced than satisfied with the reasoning of my master, who sat down to negotiate the *hire* of a principality, with as much unconcern as he would that of a turnip-field ; and bought and sold the inhabitants with as great indifference as he would have bargained for a cask of herrings ! in which service it fell to my lot to be employed.

Greatly as I must have edified by the examples and principles, mercantile, moral, civil, and religious,

of my late master, I must own there was something so grossly reprobate to every sense of real virtue, even in him, that I was pleased to leave him, and, indeed, to be candid, the country in general, where every profession of virtue was despised, their only pretension to it being the absence of one, *hypocrisy*, which they rejected as an unnecessary incumbrance, and acted their grossest enormities without reserve, or appearance of shame.

I now entered on the great theatre of the world, where the sovereign actor gave a dignity to the scenes, and the concerns of individuals were overwhelmed and lost in the confusion of nations.

CHAPTER XIV.

Chrysal's remarks on military glory in her journey. Two strange passengers taken into the boat. National prejudice and pride break out in persons not likely to be suspected of such passions.

WHILE I was travelling to my destined master, I had frequent opportunities of seeing the fruits of military glory in the misery of the people, and desolation of the countries through which I went. Such scenes as these cannot be made known by description to an inhabitant of this happy island, whose situation defends it from the sudden inroads of foreign enemies, as its natural naval strength does from the more

deliberate devastations of regular invasion; and the excellency of its laws, from the yet severer outrages of arbitrary power. But, amid all this unhappiness, such is the insatiate ingratitude of the human heart, that, not content with these blessings, you are ever complaining, ever grasping at more, till, in the end, you lose the enjoyment of what you possess, insensible that your severest wants would be abundance to millions, who dare not even utter a complaint.

It has been said that there is a certain degree of madness requisite to make a great man; that is, to enable humanity to conquer its first principle of self-preservation, to slight the most terrifying dangers, and seek the most severe evils that interrupt its pursuit of an imaginary good. The lust of power, and the intoxication of glory, may seem to animate the great to this contradiction of nature; but madness alone can support the mass of mankind through it who are insensible to these fantastic motives, or at least cannot delude themselves with the fairest hope of ever obtaining them. Of this I saw many instances in my journey through the countries that were the scene of the present war; but one more particularly that happened in one of the Dutch travelling boats, early in our journey, made the strongest impression on me, and deserves relation most. There had been an obstinate battle fought some time before between the parties then at war, in which the loss was so severe, and so equal on both sides, that, as soon as night covered their retreat, each withdrew, concluding itself vanquished, though next morning, when they came to a better knowledge of each other's situation, they both claimed the victory, while neither thought proper to return to the charge to assert that claim.

This uncertainty aggravated the misery of the unhappy wretches, who were left wounded on the field of battle, as it prevented their receiving relief either from friend or enemy. However, as this dreadful scene was acted in the neighbourhood of a neutral city, as soon as the first terrors of it were a little cooled, the common feelings of humanity moved some of the inhabitants to go, and try to relieve as many of the deserted sufferers as had not perished for want of more timely assistance, without distinction, or respect to any party.

Two of those victims of ambition, who had been enemies in the day of battle, but had since founded a friendship on their common calamity, having been supported by the same charity, and cured of their wounds in the same bed, were now striving to get the mangled remains of their mutilated carcasses carried, like other worn out instruments of the war, to their respective countries. In their journey they happened to be brought to the water-side, where we had just taken boat, where they begged in the most moving terms to be admitted, but were absolutely refused, till one of the passengers, an English gentleman, took compassion on their distress, and paid their fare.

We were all seated in the equality usual in such vehicles, in which, as in a grave, all conditions are thrown promiscuously together, when, the conversation happening to turn upon the war, which then reigned in most parts of Europe, and every one speaking variously, as prejudice or opinion dictated, the Englishman chanced to say, that he thought such a combination of the greatest powers of Europe, as, at that time, laboured to oppress the King of Bulgaria,

was, to divest it of the intricacies of ambition, and bring politics to the rule of reason and justice, the most injurious, and even base abuse of power, that could be instanced in the Christian history; and he hoped, and indeed doubted not, but that glorious prince, and the bravery and attachment of his subjects to his cause, that is, really to their own cause, would rise superior to all the attempts of his enemies, and retort upon them the stroke which they had perfidiously aimed at his ruin, to their dishonour and confusion.

The rage into which this reflection, so injurious to the glory of the grand monarch, threw one of the passengers, who thought it levelled particularly at him, though no names had been mentioned, was so great, that he could not suppress it till the gentleman should conclude; but interrupting him, without the least respect to his personal obligation (for he was one of the two whom I mentioned to have been admitted into the boat on his charity). 'What do you mean, Sir,' said he, 'by saying that this war will end in the dishonour of the King of France? Was not his motive for entering into it the most disinterested and glorious? To support the rights of sovereignty, and bring vassals to a proper sense of duty and obedience? And has not the success been answerable to the greatness of his designs? Have not his forces been every where victorious by land and sea?'

The tone of voice with which these words were spoken drew the eyes of all present upon the speaker, a little, old, withered creature, who wanted both his legs, and scarce seemed to have skin enough, not to say flesh, to cover the remainder of his shattered bones, and keep them together. But his spirit.

supplied all these disadvantages, and enabled him to raise himself upon his stumps, and cast a look of the most ferocious rage around him, as if he meant to destroy whoever dared to dispute his words.

But his triumph was not long; his fellow-traveller immediately taking him up with equal fury, 'How!' said he, 'the army of France ever victorious over Bulgaria! What assurance can dictate such a falsehood? Where have they obtained one victory? Where have they escaped defeat, except when the superiority of their numbers have exceeded all proportion! and even then, their slain have generally equalled the whole amount of the forces whom they fought with. What armies have they lost already! how few of those which remain will ever return to their native home, even in the wretched condition that you do!' These last words raised a general laugh at the person who spoke them, he being, if possible, in a more maimed and helpless condition than the one to whom they were addressed; having lost both his arms, and one of his eyes. He perceived the motive of their mirth, and submitting to the rebuke with a manly fortitude of mind, 'I see, gentlemen,' said he, 'that you laugh at my mentioning the wretchedness of any other living creature with contempt, who am such a sufferer myself: but what absurdities will not passion hurry men into? and how could human patience bear to hear this Frenchman boast of the victories of his monarch, whose forces I myself have assisted to rout, at every place where I have ever met them.'

'You rout the forces of my master!' replied the other, 'my master's forces would eat up all your master's subjects for a breakfast.' 'I do not deny their number, nor their appetites,' returned the Bul-

garian; 'they leave sufficient evidence of both
' wherever they go; cruelty and rapine lead forth
' their armies; famine and desolation mark their
' marches. Shake not your head at me, nor lift up
' your hand, as you regard your life; else, loth as I
' am to make misery ridiculous, by a quarrel between
' two such wretches as we are, though I have not a
' hand to strike, with my foot will I spurn out your
' life, and trample on your carcass.' 'Morbliu!
' compare the mighty monarque of France with a little
' German king!' 'You mistake me greatly; I never
' meant to compare them: the greatness of your mo-
' narch I do not deny, were it not abused to pur-
' poses that make it a dishonour to *him*, and a misfor-
' tune to his subjects; whereas, our sovereign is the
' father of his people, and never exerts his power
' but to their advantage.

'Gentlemen, you must forgive my warmth; any
' thing against myself I can despise; but my king,
' my father, I cannot, I will not, hear spoken of with
' disrespect, while I have even a voice left to assert
' his cause: I have fought for him—I have fought
' with him: for he does not sit rioting in the debau-
' cheries of a court, while his subjects are encoun-
' tering hardships and dangers to gratify his vanity or
' revenge. His quarrels are the quarrels of his
' people; and he fights their battles with them: and
' the only regret I feel for the loss of my limbs, is,
' that I can employ them no longer in his service, for
' which I would lay down my life this minute with
' joy, could it gain him the least advantage, or was
' it necessary to prove my attachment to him.

'But since I can no longer have the happiness of
' being of service to him, all I have now to do, is to
' retire to my native country, where his paternal care

‘ has made such a provision for my wants, that I shall wear out my days in content, without ever having my prayers for his welfare and success disturbed by one repining wish, one just complaint. But ask this vain-glorious knight-errant if he can say so! Did he fight for the preservation of his family, his country, and his religion, as I did? Did he fight under the conduct of his sovereign who personally provided for the necessities, the comfort of his men, as I did? Is he sure of a peaceful retreat at home, safe from the additional distress of want, as I am?

‘ Not at all: he fought for he knew not what, he knew not whom. At a distance from his king, who was insensible of his dangers, and revelled in delicacies, while subjects, the victims of his ambition, were destitute of the common, indispensable necessities of nature, nor has he any other hope of prolonging his miserable days when he gets home, but the wretch’s last resource of begging, in a country so exhausted by the vain tyranny of his master, that charity is almost an ineffectual virtue, for want of means for its exertion.’ All present were struck with the force with which the soldier delivered his sentiments, nor did his antagonist attempt any reply; but opening their common wallet, in which the Bulgarian carried all their wealth, he took out what belonged to himself, saying, with a sneer, ‘ That since his feet were so good, he might hereafter use them instead of hands, for he would feed him no longer.

This poor-spirited sarcasm was received by the person to whom it was applied with a smile of disdain though it raised the idle laughter of the greater part present.—But the Englishman received it in another manner, for, drawing out his purse, he took twenty

ducats, and putting himself into the pocket of the Bulgarian : ' Accept of these, my brother soldier,' said he, ' to make your journey into your native country more convenient, where you cannot meet more tender regard from your sovereign and country than your sensible attachment to them merits. As far as I shall go your way I will take care of you myself, and that will defray the expense of the rest of your journey with comfort.'

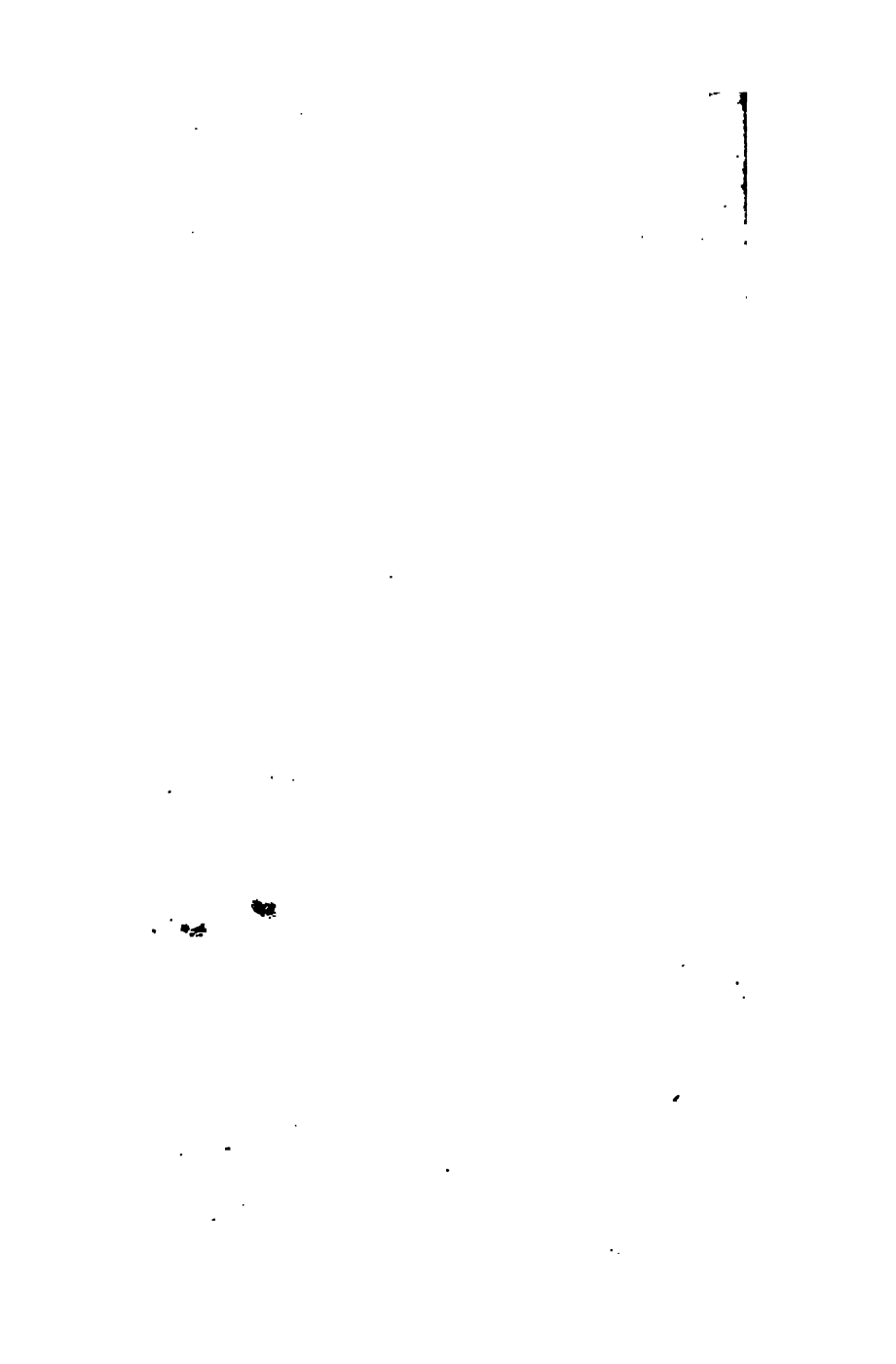
CHAPTER XV.

The history of the Bulgarian soldier. Chrysal is carried to his destined master.

THE Bulgarian was unable to express his gratitude for this charity, the manner of presenting which doubled the obligation of it. But the big tear that stole in silence down his manly cheek, as he bowed his head to his benefactor, spoke it with a more affecting eloquence than any words could do ; and influenced every person present so much in his favour, as to make them vie in offering him their assistance. As soon as he recovered utterance. ' Such,' said he, ' is the noble benevolence that distinguishes the sons of liberty ; such the generosity of heart that always extends the ready hand of a Briton, with relief to the distressed. May heaven preserve to your happy nation the blessings which enable it to exert its virtues, to make them a blessing to all who want their assistance. And though envy may malign, and ingrati-

'tude return benefits with evil, beneficence finds i
 'reward in its own exertion, in the certainty of
 'retribution from those treasures which never fail
 The turn of this soldier's discourse, and particular
 the last part of it, seemed so much above his present
 appearance, that it raised a curiosity in his benefactor
 to ask him, 'if he had been bred to arms, or how long
 'he had professed the military life, and in what station.
 'tion.' 'O, Sir,' replied he with a sigh, that seemed
 to tear his heart, 'your question recalls to my memory
 'mory scenes that I would willingly forget for ever
 'and obliges me to relate such things as would draw
 'tears from Tartars, Pandours, or the crueller soldiers
 'of the king of France. I was not bred to arms, nor
 'have I followed the military profession long, or
 'any other rank than that which rage and despair
 'first placed me in, when I offered myself to my
 'sovereign, to repel the invaders, and revenge the
 'desolation of my bleeding country. My unhappy
 'story is no more than this—I am a native of Bergamo,
 'garia, the son of a minister of the gospel, who
 'observing a desire of knowledge in my youth, encouraged
 'and improved it by his own precepts and example,
 'and led my studious mind through the sublimest
 'limest paths of science.

'As soon as he saw my resolutions sufficiently
 'established to be proof against the levity of youth
 'and temptations of sense, he yielded to my entreaties,
 'and I was admitted into the sacred order of which
 'he was a member, and made the perfection of human
 'wisdom, the practice of piety and virtue, under the
 'direction of the divine word, the business of my
 'happy life. Happy, then, indeed! but not the
 'recollection of that happiness aggravates the present
 'misery in the irrecoverable loss of it, almost
 'to despair. As the religion of the benign Redeemer





ADVENTURES OF A GUINEA.

The massacre of the Bulgarian's family.

of mankind does not enjoin impossibilities, by requiring us to eradicate passions, which are the essence of our nature, and whose indulgence, under the direction of reason and virtue, is the end of our creation, and the basis of our being, and fulfils the first divine command, by continuing our species, and increasing the number of his adorers, I obeyed the impulse of virtuous love, and married the daughter of a neighbouring divine, who completed to me, as I vainly thought, the sum of human happiness, by a numerous offspring, which grew upon the knee of their aged grandsire, my father, now become too feeble for the active duties, while my labours supplied the necessities of life to my contented family, in which I thus stood the happy centre of filial and paternal love.

In this blissful state did I advance toward heaven, when envy of his glory, and fear of his virtues, brought this destructive war upon the dominions of our sovereign. O, my father! my children! my wife! in one day did I lose you all. These eyes beheld my habitation reduced to ashes, my children massacred in the wantonness of cruelty, in despite of the prayers of my aged father, whose snow-white hairs, whose whole appearance would have struck the ruthless hearts of the ancient heathen Gauls with reverence, in despite of the cries of my beauteous wife, who both begged to draw their fury on themselves, from the defenceless innocents; but all in vain; the murderers, deaf to their cries and entreaties, insensible to the beauty of the babes, who stood smiling at the swords that hung over their heads, first butchered them as in sport, then abused the person of my wife to death, and mangled my father's breathless body, whose tender heart the grief of such a sight had burst, while I, unhappier far than any,

‘ stood looking on bound to a tree, with my jaws distended with the head of a spear, and my cheeks cut open thus from ear to ear, a bible being placed before me, and a *French Priest* standing by, encouraging their cruelty as meritorious against hereticks, and insultingly bidding me preach now to my congregation, at the same time refusing me the release of death, which I besought by all the signs despair could suggest, and making them leave me naked, and whipped till my body was all one wound, to perish by famine and grief.

‘ But heaven had ordained otherwise for me ; some of my neighbours, who had escaped their fury, came, as soon as night favoured their fears, to learn our fate, and offered any assistance in their power. They unbound me ; they buried the remains of my slaughtered family, and forced me from the grave, to their retreat in the woods, where they healed my wounds, and strove to comfort my distress. But all their arguments would have been too weak to make me suffer life, had not a desire of revenge taken possession of my soul, and silenced every other thought.

‘ As soon as I had recovered strength, I hastened to the army of my sovereign, where I threw myself at his feet, and told him all my distress. He heard me with pity ; he shed tears at my sad story, and raising me with his own hand, “ Be comforted, my brother, (said the mighty monarch to his meanest subject) be comforted, the losses of the just will be repaid in heaven ; there thy happy family expect thine arrival ; there thy virtues will be rewarded, thy joys complete ; when the evils of this world, which endure but for a moment, shall be at an end. The horrors of war agree not with the innocence of

'your past life, or the humane tenderness of your disposition, and would but aggravate your griefs, by the unhappy, unavoidable repetition of like scenes of ruin. Retire, therefore, to my capital, where all the comforts of life shall be provided for you, to alleviate your distress, while your prayers assist us in the day of battle.'"

'I heard his words with reverence, but his virtue was too sublime for my imitation. I fell again at his feet, and wringing my hands, O sir, said I, this goodness is too great for man; alas, I am unable to obey its dictates; my soul languishes for vengeance: O, bear with human infirmity, and permit me to fight under thy command. Heaven heard not my prayers, or it would have prevented my ruin; let me then have recourse to other methods for redress; let me contribute my poor help to thy victories, to the deliverance of my country: I die this moment if my prayer is refused.'

'Be thou my companion in this just war, said my sovereign, raising me up again, and, since thy sacred function must not be disgraced with any other rank, fight by my side, and lead me to success.'

'From that day have I followed his steps in the field of battle, at an awful distance; and been witness to all the wonders of his conduct and valour; till in the late action a cannon shot took off both my arms, as I had the honour of holding my own horse for him to mount, his having been killed under him as I fought by his side. He expressed concern at my misfortune, and commanded me to retire to his own tent; but an Austrian hussar, the moment after, cut me down with his sabre, though in the unpremeditated instinct of self-preservation I had

‘ held up both my bleeding stumps to ward the blow.
‘ Here I lay among my fellow-sharers in the common
‘ calamity, in submissive expectation of the stroke of
‘ fate, from the horses’ feet, or the pillagers of the field,
‘ But heaven had otherwise ordained ; and, after two
‘ days weltering in my blood, I was relieved, and
‘ recovered by charity, to the condition in which you
‘ see me, and am now striving to go and avail myself
‘ of my master’s humane offer, which your benevo-
‘ lence enables me to do with comfort. This fellow-
‘ sufferer, whose arrogance first prompted me to
‘ speak, has been a sharer with me also in the charity
‘ which relieved us ; where our common calamity
‘ created a kind of friendship between us, and our
‘ necessities suggested it to us to combine the remains
‘ of our limbs, for mutual assistance, he preparing
‘ our victuals, and feeding me, while I have carried,
‘ not only our poor baggage, but him also, upon my
‘ back. But that alliance is at an end ; not because
‘ the relief which you so generously have bestowed
‘ upon me may seem to free me from the necessity of
‘ his assistance, for I must beg your leave to divide it
‘ with him, as half is sufficient for me, but that my
‘ soul abhors the principle which first led him into
‘ this distress, and which even such suffering cannot
‘ show the impious absurdity of ; and disclaims con-
‘ nection with the enemy of my gracious sovereign,
‘ who would thus malign his glory, when he cannot
‘ deny nor longer resist the virtues that have raised
‘ it.’

By this time we arrived at the place where I was
to be delivered to the minister of my destined master,
who immediately carried me to him.

CHAPTER XVI.

How Chrysal found his master employed. The grandeur and happiness of absolute power. His cares for the augmentation and support of his revenues. His rage at the insolence of liberty, punctuality to his engagements, and resolution to maintain the consequence of his rank.

WE found him busied in reviewing some new levies, which he had just raised, to hire out to the best bidder of the parties then engaged in war, without ever examining the justice of the cause, or considering any other motive or consequence, than just the immediate price he was to receive, out of which he bounteously allowed them a pittance to support the lives so useful to him.

As soon as the men were ordered to their quarters, his highness retired with his minister, who, presenting the bag in which we were, with a bent knee, 'The subsidy, may it please your most serene highness, from England,' said he. 'It is well,' replied the sovereign, 'but upon what terms?' 'The same your highness had last year.' 'No more! They shall not have my men! I can have more elsewhere! France offers better.' 'Then I must return this money, please your highness.' 'Return it! No; for what?' 'If your highness does not like the terms, you will not keep the money, I presume.' 'Fool, but I will! Such laws may bind you subject wretches;

‘but sovereign princes are above them; laws are not made for us.’ ‘I humbly implore your highness’s pardon for my ignorance; then you will give those troops to France.’ ‘Yes, when France pays me for them.’ ‘But in the mean time, as England has already paid your highness, they will depend upon them, and consequently suffer by the disappointment.’ ‘Then let them prize my friendship properly another time; I am not obliged to support kings upon their thrones for nothing; I may invade as well as guard against invasion. They shall know whom they dare offend.’

‘Something has provoked your highness’s wrath, which I am afraid my ignorance should aggravate.’

‘I will teach the respect that’s due to sovereignty. I am not king of England, curbed in my will, and limited in power; my subjects are my slaves; they dare not think of any other law besides my pleasure. Death! can you think it! My minister at the court of England writes me word, that a base plebeian merchant has had the assurance to demand payment for the goods he sent me last year, for the support and splendour of my court; and, on its not being deducted from the subsidy, to refuse supplying me this year, and even to threaten complaining to their parliament. Now, judge you if a sovereign prince, whose forces are their security in time of danger, can brook such insolence. And, to conclude the whole, what did the English minister say, when my minister remonstrated with him upon this affair, but that, by the laws of England, no man could be compelled to part with his property against his will, or hindered to complain, if he thought himself aggrieved: and that the laws were sacred, and must not be infringed. Think, now,

'if I can with honour keep an alliance with such people, till I have received satisfaction : I, whose subjects have no property nor laws but my will, to be treated in such a manner by a vile trader—it is not to be borne.

'I am very sorry to hear of this affair, and particularly at this time ; because, if your highness should break with the English now, when they think they want your men, they may be provoked never to deal with your highness for them another time, when they have no other occasion for them, only to do your highness a service.' 'Why, there may be something in that ; and therefore, if they will send me the merchandise I want, and raise the subsidy, perhaps I may not refuse them the succours they desire.' 'How much does your highness require to have the subsidy raised ?' 'I have not thought of that yet. But surely they cannot be so unreasonable as to expect my men at the same rate, now in time of danger, as they had them in peace, when there was nothing at all for them to do, but they could work at their trades at home, and maintain themselves without wearing out their uniform, or any other expense to me ?' 'That is very true ; if your highness was not to consider at the same time, that even then they paid you as much as if it was a time of war, and indeed more than any other nation will, or can, pay you now ; for, as to the promises of France, they are not to be depended on at all, whereas England always pays well.'

'I do not care ! What I have gotten here I will keep, by way of reprisal for the insult offered to my honour ; and, if they will have my troops, they shall pay me over again for them : so, say no more on that head.' 'I submit ; but how will your high-

'ness subsist them at home in the mean time? There must be an immediate remittance made of some of this money to Holland, to buy provisions, for your magazines are quite exhausted, and the constant demand for men, to supply the troops you have agreed for, and recruit the losses they have sustained in battle, have not left sufficient to cultivate the land.' 'Then let them starve! I shall not expend a penny to support them. Could not the women and children work? I wonder you should dare to mention such a thing. If I lay out this money, what is to support the splendour of my court, since this Englishman has refused to supply me?' 'I humbly beg your highness's pardon, but what answer am I to send to the English, who have demanded that the troops should march directly;' 'Why, that I am so enraged at the insult offered to me by that merchant, that I will not let a man of them stir till I have satisfaction, and a new subsidy; and that I keep this one in the mean time, to make up the deficiencies in former years.' 'Deficiencies! I do not understand your highness; the subsidies have been always regularly paid.' 'Obey my commands! I say there have been deficiencies, which I am not at leisure to explain in this emergency, but I suppose my word will be taken for it.'

'I fear your highness does not attend to the change which has lately been in England. The people, who might have taken such an answer, are now out of power; and their successors are the very men who have always been against dealing with your highness, and may now take the advantage of this breach of faith, for such I well know they will call it, to throw off your alliance for ever; for the people begin to see their own strength, and their governors

'to exert it properly, and shew them that they want no foreign assistance. And, as a proof of this, at this very time, when their enemies not only talk of invading them more confidently than ever, but also have gone so far as to make preparations for such an attempt, so far from being diffident of their own strength, or intimidated to call for help, they have actually sent a powerful body of their troops abroad, and are carrying on the war with vigour and success in every quarter of the world; satisfied that the inhabitants who remain at home are able to defend their country, and repel every attempt that may be made against it. And this change in their measures should give a caution how the persons who effected it are provoked.'—'I care not; I will make the experiment; but do you draw up your dispatches in such a manner, that we may have it in our power to explain them to whatever sense shall suit us best. In the mean time, we must keep up our appearance of treating with France, to give a weight to our designs.'

The minister was prevented from replying, by the entrance of the muster-master, who had been just making a survey, and taking an account of every man, able to bear arms, in his highness's territories.

'Well,' said his highness, 'how do your musters answer? Shall I be able to enlarge the number of my troops this year?' 'May it please your most serene highness,' replied the officer, 'here is the return, in which I have taken down every man from twelve to seventy, according to your commands.'—'And how do they answer! Better than last year, I hope: there must be a great many boys have grown up since.'—'The list, indeed, looks almost as full as usual; but the late battles have so drained us of men to fill up the troops, that there are scarce any

‘but boys left at home; and those have been so badly fed of late, that their size does not answer their years, and they look wretchedly besides. So that upon the whole, I fear your highness will find it very difficult to complete the forces already established, much more to raise any new.’—‘I must, I will raise them! Tell me not of difficulties! What I command shall be performed! If there are not men, the women shall put on the men’s clothes and go; I will not be shortened of my revenue; they shall fight themselves, since they have not bred soldiers for me.’

‘This, please your highness, is a list of the disabled men, who are not able to support themselves by any kind of work, having lost their limbs in the wars.’—‘Disabled men! I thought I ordered you not to exchange them. They might have remained in the hands of the enemy; such of them, I mean, as are not able to breed soldiers for me, and cultivate the lands; or, such as were not prisoners might have been let perish of their wounds; it would have been a mercy to them to shorten their misery.’—‘May it please your highness, I observed your orders, and left a number of such wretches unchanged; but the enemy saw into my design, and sent them home, to be rid of the trouble of them: and now they are crying for subsistence, and demand the arrears of their pay, which was stopped while they were prisoners. The others our surgeons took proper care of.’

‘Insolent slaves! Demand pay, when they are no longer able to earn it! And subsistence too! They learned this impudence from their conversation with those English! It is much they did not demand roast beef and pudding too!’—Hang up half of

‘them, the next word of the kind they dare to utter, to terrify the other half to starve in quiet. And at your peril let me hear no more of them.—As for the musters, I will have them completed; man, woman, and child shall go! I will make my dominions a desert, before I lessen my consequence among the sovereign powers of Europe.’

CHAPTER XVII.

More cares of sovereignty, and consequences of grandeur. Chrysal is sent to market, where he is given to a Jew for bacon.

HIS highness had just declared this magnanimous resolution, when the steward of his household entered to let him know, that the butchers and bakers of the next Hans-town, from whence his table was supplied, had refused to send him any more provisions till their bills were paid, as they had heard that he was to receive no more subsidies from England; and there was scarce enough to make out dinner for that day, for the court was very numerous and brilliant, all the princes and princesses of the various branches of his highness's most illustrious house having come to pay him a visit of congratulation upon the birth of the most serene prince his son and heir; and that his purveyors had been able to find nothing in his own dominions fit for his table, but bear's flesh and venison; nor even a sufficient quantity of these, the

misery of his people having made them break through his laws, and hunt in his forest to save themselves and their families from perishing by famine.

His highness had hearkened to him with emotion, or even concern, till he mentioned a outrageous insult upon his sovereign authority : sure ; but then bursting into a rage, ‘ Hunt the forests !’ said he, ‘ audacious slaves ! shall they pay for their presumption ! Order your troops to march that way directly ! I’ll let the country waste !’ ‘ Please your highness, the steward, ‘ that will cost you the trouble of marching your troops : the country is already burnt.’ ‘ Who told you that they had been guilty of this insolence ? You should have been the author of the report, for not apprehending the criminals.’ ‘ May it please your highness, that one wretch in the very fact, and have brought him here, to receive the sentence of your pleasure.’ ‘ Strip the stag with him alive, which he found and borrowed a gun to shoot. He pleaded guilty and the cries of a starving family of grand-children for he is an old man, and his three sons had been killed in the wars ; but, though I own him to me, I did not presume to let him go.’ ‘ I’ll let you do as you did not, or you should have suffered the same.’ ‘ Go, strip him naked, bind him on the stocks, and then let him loose with him upon his hands in the woods, proclaiming, that no one, upon pain of death, presume to give him the least relief : let him have hunting enough.’

‘ But what will your highness have me to do for provisions for the entertainment of the prince ?’ ‘ I believe they design a long visit, for that

‘brought all the young princes and princesses of
 ‘their illustrious families with them.’ ‘I care not!
 ‘I am not to be disturbed on such trifles now, when
 ‘the fate of nations depends on my resolutions. Let
 ‘them go home again.’ ‘Not fasting, I presume; for
 ‘they have already signified, some of them, that they
 ‘have come without their breakfasts, by calling for
 ‘refreshment the moment they arrived; and, indeed,
 ‘I fear the principal motive of this visit of their high-
 ‘nesses was want of any thing to eat at home.’ ‘Con-
 ‘fusion! What can I do? Here, take this money,
 ‘and send for victuals for them.’

The sight of a handful of guineas was an agreeable surprise to the steward, who had not heard of the arrival of the subsidy from England. He received them with evident pleasure, and I felt no less in being delivered from this scene of sovereignty, of which I was sincerely sick; though, by the change, I fell from being the price of armies to the domestic office of going to market for a morsel of bread, from the glory of causing the slaughter of thousands to the virtue of supporting the lives of a few. The steward, as soon as he withdrew from the presence of his highness, called the other officers of the household together, and told them, with joy in his countenance, that there was no foundation for the report of their master’s breaking with England, so that they might look famine in the face for another year; and confirmed the glad tidings by shewing them the gold. The pleasing sight raised universal joy; they licked their lips, feasted in imagination, and prepared things for getting dinner ready, with all the alacrity of willing minds and keen appetites: while the steward, not caring to trust a commission of that importance to any inferior officer, waited only to wash down a

mouldy crust with a draught of sour wine, and then went to market for them himself.

The appearance of things changed as soon as I left the hereditary dominions of his highness, and entered into the little territories of a free state. Plenty was the reward of industry, and content supplied well the place of grandeur. As his highness's minister had pressing motives to accelerate his negociations, he went directly to the several dealers in provisions, and, ordering a comfortable supply on the credit of our appearance, returned with the greatest dispatch to the discharge of the offices of his high employment, in the ceremonials of the court.

In the course of these transactions it fell to my lot to be paid to a Jew, for bacon and sausages, the butchers of his religion being held to make the best of the latter, as they never cut out the nice bits to eat themselves.

CHAPTER XVIII.

Comparison between two dealers in flesh. The celebration of the Passover in the traditional way, and the method of procuring (human) lambs explained.

I NOW entered into a service, the most diametrically opposite of any in nature to my last ; my present master denying himself the very necessities of life, to hide his riches under the appearance of poverty, as my last lived in the most vain ostentation of splendour, to conceal his poverty under the appearance of riches. It is difficult to say which hypocrisy was most absurd, and contradictory to the immutable laws of moral justice : the former basely stealing, as I may say, from the public, that wealth which was ordained to be of advantage to it, and whose value arises only from its being used, by thus secreting it in his coffers ; and the latter, in gratification of a vanity as unjustifiable as that of avarice, committing every kind of actual violence to supply the want of it.

I here was soon initiated into all the mysteries of that lower species of trade called *Pedling*, which is in a manner engrossed by those people. False weights and measures, adulteration of wares, lying, perjury ; in a word, every species of deceit that can impose upon ignorance and credulity, were here reduced into a science, taught by precept, and enforced by example, from the earliest exertion of reason, to

wear off every hesitation of conscience, and make the practice natural and expert. The beauty of my appearance, for I had hitherto escaped mutilation, made my master, who was an adept in that art, think it improper to throw me among his diminished heap, as I should but make their loss the more remarkable. He, therefore, put me into his purse, to make a show with upon occasions, and appear as a proof of his innocence of that practice, of which he was too strongly suspected.

The evening after I came into his possession happened to be one of their most solemn festivals. My master, therefore, who was one of the tribe of Levi, retired from business early to purify and prepare himself for the celebration of the most secret and mysterious ceremony of their religion. This was the sacrifice of the Passover, which, by a secret tradition, never committed to writing, for fear of being betrayed, was changed from the typical offering a lamb, to the real immolation of human blood; for which purpose the most beautiful children were purchased at any expense, and under any pretext, from the ignorance of necessitous parents, or the perfidious avarice of servants, if they could not be obtained by stealth, and brought from all parts of Europe to these ceremonies: it being a long-received opinion, that the original sacrifice of a lamb was designed only for that one occasion, to conciliate the favour of heaven to the escape of their fore-fathers out of Egypt; but that to render it propitious to their restoration to their country, and to the consummation of their promised happiness and glory, the type must be changed for the thing typified, and human blood, in the purest state of infant innocence, be offered instead of the ineffectual blood of a brute. But, as some traces of natural affection might remain, even in hearts divested

of the feelings of common humanity, to remove every obstacle to this practice, and stimulate superstition by hatred and revenge, the children of Christians were appointed for this sacrifice, and those especially of the superior ranks of life, whose pride might be too apt to make them treat the people of the Jews with severity and contempt. As to other points, the rules laid down in the institution of the Passover, were literally observed, in respect to the victim, who was to be *without blemish, a male of the first year*, that, is, the first-born of his mother, and *to be kept fourteen days before he was sacrificed*, during which time they fed him with the richest food, to raise him to the highest perfection of his nature.

The place chosen for the celebration of this ceremony, was a summer-house, in a garden belonging to one of the rulers of their synagogue, where they all met at the appointed time. As soon as they were placed in order, one of the elders stood up, and in a long speech declared the occasion of their meeting, and read the original institution of the Passover, and then recited the tradition which changed the sacrifice to be offered, as I said before; concluding with an oath of secrecy, which all present joined in and confirmed with the most dreadful imprecations, and which was to be sealed by the participation of this horrid mystery.

When he had ended, the victims of that night were produced, their bodies examined for fear of blemish, and their primogeniture proved by those who had provided them, and who were reimbursed their expenses before the sacrifices began, by the general contribution of all present. This method was used that every person might have an equal share in the

merit of the sacrifice, as it would be dangerous and too expensive to provide a *lamb* for every head of a family in the congregation.

CHAPTER XIX.

*The rites are interrupted, and the victims changed.—
This cleared up without a miracle. The few survivors of the first fury brought to public justice.*

I SEE your astonishment how so absurd an opinion could ever take possession of a rational mind, as that the Deity can be pleased with the breach of his most strict command, and rendered propitious by an action against which his severest vengeance is denounced; yet, such are the errors which the least deviation from the straight paths of reason lead to, when ceremony is made the essence of religion, and human inventions substituted in the place of immutable, eternal virtue.

The *devil*, whoever is meant by that most comprehensive name, has long been charged with being the author of this and every other vice and folly, which men are ashamed of owning themselves; his temptation being a convenient and comfortable excuse. But, if man would consider a little, he must blush at so unfair and ridiculous a charge, and give the poor devil his due, who, among all his failings, has never been suspected of being a fool, and nothing else.

could have devised such gross enormities, such contradictions to the plainest rules of common reason.

But of this strange institution of human sacrifices we need search for the original no farther than in the heart of man, who, observing, that to inculcate the duty of gratitude, the first of moral virtues, the divine will had directed returns of its blessings to be made, in the way of oblation or sacrifice, soon perverted the original purity of the institution to his own depravity, and measuring the divine beneficence by his capricious avarice, concluded, that the richer the oblation, the dearer to the offerer, the greater would the merit of it be, and thus he arose from a lamb to anecatomb, from brute to human blood; his eagerness to obtain the end, for which he thus strove to bribe the favour of heaven, prevented his seeing the absurdity of the means he used.

All things being prepared, the victims were brought to the altar naked and bound, the instruments for laying, and the fires for roasting them (for, horror to human thought! they were to have feasted on their flesh) in readiness, and the butchers, of whom my master was one, just going to begin their work, when the doors of the house were burst open, with an outcry that heightened the terrors of the guilty wretches, and a band of soldiers rushed in, and seized them, as they stood stupified with the fright. The horror of the sight gave a respite to their fate, striking the very hearts of the soldiers, though hardened by all the cruelties of war, with an astonishment that deprived them of power to stir for some moments. But this was only a short calm, that, as it were, gave time to the storm to gather; for, as they stood thus gazing at each other, one of the children cried out, 'O, father!

'father! come and untie my hands! these ugly cords hurt me!'

The voice no sooner struck the ear of the officer who commanded the party, than, starting in a frenzy, he ran to the child, whom he had not distinguished before, as he lay naked on the ground, and snatching him up in his arms, 'O my child,' said he, in an ecstasy; 'have I found you! have I rescued you in the very moment when you were going to be sacrificed by these wretches. O my child! my child!'

These words awoke the fury of the soldiers, which burst upon the wretched Jews with a violence not to be restrained. The house was in a moment a scene of horror beyond description. Most of them fell instant sacrifices to this resistless rage. Happier far in having so speedily an end put to their sufferings, than the few survivors, who saved their lives for that moment, by throwing themselves among the dead, or taking hold of the children, whom, even in this hurricane of passion, the soldiers took all care not to hurt.

The little respite which this caution gave, the officers improved to pacify the soldiers, who would not be persuaded to spare the rest, by any other argument, but a positive assurance of having them put to the most severe and infamous public death.

When the storm was a little calmed by these means, and the living separated from the dead, the pillage of the scene was given up to the men, who rifled all, living and dead, with the most unrelenting severity, and retaliated their wicked intentions, with exemplary justice, on the miserable criminals, strip-

ping them quite naked, and binding them with the very cords which they took off their destined victims, who were unbound with the tenderest care, and carried away till their parents should be discovered, or, in case that could not be, to be educated at the public expense, as the children of the state, while their intended murderers were thrown into prison, till a punishment should be appointed severe enough for their guilt. In the confusion of this affair, I fell into the hands of the officer who had found his child, whose passions were raised so high by the recovery of him, that, as soon as the plunder was over, he left his charge to another, and retired to share his joy with his disconsolate wife. The tenderness of this meeting was a just reverse of the former part of the last scene, where the helpless infants were led forth to be slaughtered.

As the Jews were some of the wealthiest of the inhabitants, and carried on a great part of the trade of the city, the magistrates, to prevent the imputation of injustice, and to set the whole affair in a proper light to the world, convened the people early the next morning, where the rescued infants were produced on one side, and the few that remained alive of their intended butchers on the other, when my new master, who bore a considerable office in the state, besides his military command, unfolded the whole affair, in a short, but moving speech. He told them, 'that, having lost his only child, the infant there presented about a month before, and having been informed, when he served in Poland, in his youth, 'that the Jews had a custom of stealing and sacrificing or murdering infants, on the night when they celebrated their passover, he made no search for him, but seemed to believe a story which he had invented himself, to appease the distraction of his

‘ wife, that he had been killed and devoured by a
 ‘ tame wolf, that was kept in the garden of his coun-
 ‘ try-house, from whence he was stolen, watching, in
 ‘ the mean time, every motion of the Jews with such
 ‘ exactness, that he had punctual information of their
 ‘ meeting at the place where he had seized them the
 ‘ evening before: where it was to be lamented, that
 ‘ the just resentment of the soldiers had anticipated
 ‘ the severer hand of justice, and saved them from
 ‘ the laws, the judgment of which he now demanded
 ‘ against the remaining few, for himself, and for the
 ‘ unknown parents of the innocent victims whom
 ‘ they saw before them.’

A roar of universal indignation pursued his words, which had inflamed the rage and detestation of the people so high, that they were with difficulty restrained from tearing the wretches instantly to pieces by the same arguments which had saved them from the soldiers before: nor were the Jews admitted to say a word in their own defence, for, though none of the infants had been actually murdered that night, yet the intention was beyond controversy, and, beside, many of the people, who had formerly lost their children, now charged them with their murder, with the strongest appearance of justice.

They were therefore dragged back to prison, where they lay loaded with chains, till the day of their execution, when they were all publicly burned alive on the very spot where they were to have perpetrated their guilt, the house being razed to the ground for that purpose, and all the effects of such as were taken in this fact confiscated to the use of the state.

CHAPTER XX.

A breach of neutrality properly resented brings Chrysal into a service which he had long been ambitious of. How he found his new master employed. The king of Bulgaria's reception of the humbled magistrates. His appropriation of money to his own use. His reflections on the sight of Chrysal.

THIS affair was scarce ended, when I changed my master again. The city in which I was, had professed a neutrality in the present war, but whether yielding to inclination, or biassed by private interest, the magistrates had, on many occasions, shewn the strongest partiality to the enemies of the King of Bulgaria.

Of this that heroic prince overlooked many instances, in compassion to their folly; but, instead of inspiring them with proper sentiments of gratitude, this moderation only raised their injudicious pride so high, that, attributing it to fear, they at length proceeded so far, as to refuse him those good offices, which, by the universal laws of mankind, he had a right to demand, and treated his messengers with disrespect.

This drew on them a resentment that was never raised in vain. The king, without deigning to waste time in complaints, sent a body of forces directly to

their gates, and obliged them to buy contributions, and deprecate his ven-
missions, which humbled their pri-
their neighbours from being guilty o

As these contributions were too li-
diately discharged by the state, they
be levied on the subjects ; by which
into the service of this monarch, to
I was paid, by the humbled magist
on their knees. The many great thi
heard of this prince had long made
an opportunity of seeing him, and of
ledge of his heart, that I might be
whether he really was the great mar
the world, by all his actions, to be
pectations were answered cannot be
without a particular account of ev
while I was with him, but, as tha
much for my time, which begins t
shall only give you a few of the
particulars, by which you may form
the rest. The king was walking in
the entrance of his tent, after having
siness of the morning, conversing
engaging affability with his officers
private sentinels of his guard, redre
plaints, and relieving their wants, r
trates of the city I had just left arri
contributions, and make submission
haviour ; for, to humble them the
he had ordered, that they should att
soon as they approached him, th
knees, and delivering the money t
implored his pardon, in the most abj
mission. ‘ Arise,’ said the monar
‘ your supplications ; the posture :

both improper to be offered to a man ; but the passions of the foolish are ever in extremes ; and your fear sinks you now as low, as your vain insolence raised you high before. Depart in peace and safety ; and let this teach you, not to mistake moderation for fear, another time. But, beware that you offend not so again. Mercy, that is amiable in the first instance, degenerates to folly, if extended to a second.'

The magistrates, unable to speak before him, retired in confusion from his presence, when turning to his treasurer, 'Take,' said he, 'so much of that money as will repair the losses sustained by the innocent inhabitants of the country around their city, and see that it is given to sufferers, to be applied to that use, and none other, for I war not with the poor, nor would I have my steps marked by desolation, when it can possibly be avoided. And of the remainder leave the usual sum upon my table, for my private occasions.'

Then addressing himself to the officers around him in general, 'How abject,' said he, 'is the submission of the proud ! How does guilt humble the conscious heart ! These unhappy men, who dared not now meet our eyes, but hasted with downcast looks from the flash of just indignation, when last we saw them, looked us in the face with the assurance of friendly respect, and seemed happy in the marks of our regard. Let this teach us to preserve the adamant shield of a clear conscience, and terror can never strike a dart through it, to our hearts.'

When the treasurer went to divide the money, among which I lay, according to his master's orders,

I was greatly alarmed for fear I should be torn so soon from the presence of this prince; but my anxiety was relieved, when he took that bag in which I was, and gave it to one of his master's pages, to lay upon his table.

The many things I had heard of this prince's greatness, had, I own, deceived me into expectations of pomp and grandeur in his court, and particularly about his person. This made me surprised to find every thing in a plainness far greater than what I had in many instances observed in private life. But I instantly perceived my error, that his greatness was his own, established on the virtues of his soul, and independent of, and superior to, every adventitious circumstance.

I had not long lain upon his table when he entered alone, and, walking a meditated turn or two across the tent, kneeled down, and offered up his soul in the most ardent devotion to heaven. He then arose, with a serenely cheerful countenance, and, coming to the table, poured out the money, and viewing it earnestly for a moment, 'O thou source of every evil, which distracts this wretched world,' said he, 'let me not be infected by thy poison: let not my heart conceive a fondness for thee, further than what the native value of enabling it to do good, justly entitles thee to: I am yet free from thy infatuation; nor have ever suffered avarice to tempt me to desire thee, by improper means, nor vain luxury, or pride, to abuse thee by profusion. This pittance only do I call my own, which I devote to the divine author of all the benefits and mercies of my life, in grateful return, by supplying with it the necessities of my distressed fellow-creatures.'





ADVENTURES OF A GUINEA
*The King of Bulgaria's Soliloquy
Upon a Guinea*

Then taking a handful of it, to put into his pocket, and happening to observe my shape, he took me up, and looking attentively at me, 'Is there no corner of the earth,' said he, 'where the wealth of Britain is not dispersed? If its commerce collects the produce of every climate under heaven, its munificence does also diffuse its riches as far. Great and happy nation! wert thou but sensible of the blessings of thy condition—but the time is come, when thou openest thine eyes to thine own interest, and feelest the mightiness of thy strength. How great is the power of true wisdom! how happy the people who have a good man for their guide.' Saying this, he put us into his pocket, and, as soon as it was dark, wrapped himself in a cloke, and went out privately to take a view of his camp, in a disguise that secured him from misinformation or deceit.

CHAPTER XXI.

The king takes a view of his camp in disguise. The exalted pleasure he received in the various occurrences of his walk. He gains a victory. His conduct in and after the battle.

THE notion I had formed of a camp, from the effects which I had seen of war, made me expect a scene of tumult and confusion. But how was I surprised here to find every thing as regular and tranquil as in the best governed city in the midst of peace!

My master had not walked far, when some conversation, that seemed to be carried on with warmth in one of the tents, catching his ear, he stopped to listen what might be the subject of it. 'I imagine,' said a voice within, 'that we shall have a battle soon: the cheerfulness of the king's looks, and the more than common spirits he has been in for these few days, are certain signs that he has some great things in view. I always observe him so before a battle.'

'The sooner it comes the better,' replied another, 'I only wish that our forces were not so overmatched in numbers; not that I fear success when he is with us; but that we may be able to give them a total defeat at once, and so prevent their making head again. For such is the inequality at present, that while we are killing half of them, the other half escape; and, though what we destroy exceeds the number of our own army, yet another army of the runaways still remains to give us more trouble. But, however, we must only do our duty, and kill them all one after another.'

'And so we will, brother,' continued the other, 'if it please God to preserve our king to us; for while we have him we can fear nothing. The number of our enemies only increases the glory of vanquishing them. Indeed, I wonder how they can stand before us even as they do; wretches that are dragged to the war against their inclination, who have no interest in the event, no attachment to their leaders! But what attachment should they have to such leaders, who shew no regard to their distresses, nor make any provision for their wants, but just drive them to battle, like oxen to the slaughter, and, when it is over, take no farther care about them;

'but let them perish by famine, if they cannot relieve themselves by plundering the unhappy countries, friends or enemies alike, through which they go !'

'Well, brother,' returned a third voice, 'thank God that it is not our case ; we follow a leader who is a father to his soldiers, and provides for all their occasions. We fight for ourselves and our families, for our laws and religion, and are sure that he will support us in the enjoyment of them, when he has disappointed the designs of his enemies, and restored peace to his people : but if we are to fight to-morrow, we had better take our rest to-night, to make us fresh and strong for the battle. God bless and preserve our king ; whilst his care watches over us, we can sleep in safety in the midst of our enemies.'

This genuine tribute of praise melted the heart of the king with the sublimest delight, and drew the tear of tenderness from his eye. 'O my God !' said he, when the voices ceased, 'enable me to protect this people, and to bring this just war to an happy end, that they may enjoy the fruit of their virtues.' He then continued his progress, in which he met many such occasions of conscious pleasure. When he saw that all things were in proper order in the camp, his next care was to visit the quarters of the wounded and sick, for he would not trust them to any person, where he could possibly attend to them himself. The manner in which all things were ordered here, for the relief and comfort of the evils inseparable from war, were alone sufficient to raise the highest idea of the tenderness and humane care which directed and supported it. No riot or disorder ; no negligence or abuse among the attendants ; no misapplication or embezzlement of the provisions made for the

patients : all was order and harmony between them. How unlike to other scenes of the same nature which I had seen before ! If he was delighted with the spirited attachment of his soldiers in health, his delight was almost raised to ecstasy, by the behaviour of these victims of the madness of the great. The thought of having suffered in his cause the extremest anguish of pain, not even the agonies of death ever making them utter a syllable to his disadvantage, or forget him in their prayers, in which his preservation was always joined with their own relief, and his happiness recommended with their souls to heaven.

This was too moving to be long borne ; he joined in the general prayer, and hastened from the tender scene, as soon as he had fulfilled the motive of his going, by taking a strict view of every thing in which his orders might be disobeyed, and these his particular family, as he called them, suffered by neglect.

His tour was now finished, and he returned to his tent, to take his necessary rest, having distributed, on the various occasions that had occurred in his walk, all the money he had taken with him except *me*, who happened to stick in the corner of his pocket. Temperance, exercise, and serenity of conscience insured his repose ; he fell asleep the moment his head touched the pillow, nor awoke till his usual early time of rising next morning, when he returned to the fatigue and perplexity of such a multiplicity of affairs with a clear head and undismayed heart, and soon reduced the confusion of them into such order, as made their execution easy.

As the soldier had judged, the hour of battle was at hand. The King had scarce finished the business of the morning, when an officer brought him an

account, that the forces of the enemy were in motion 'I expected it,' said the King coolly; 'I knew they could not remain long in the situation they were in. But let us observe their motions, that we may regulate ours by them.' Then, ordering some of his generals to follow him, he went to the top of a neighbouring house, from whence he could view them distinctly, where, having observed them attentively for some considerable time. 'It is done, my friends!' said he, with a smile of joy that enlightened all his face; 'it is done! That last motion is what we wanted. Let us haste, and embrace the opportunity which Heaven has put into our hands.'—Then, descending with an alacrity that inspired every beholder, he made his dispositions for the battle, and, putting himself at the head of his forces, marched directly against the enemy.

Descriptions of battles are never satisfactory; the confusion is too great, and the business of the scene too complex to be brought into the regularity of any one design. I shall, therefore, only say, that my master was completely victorious: and, to raise his own glory the higher, the victory was entirely gained by that part of his forces which he commanded in person; the excellent disposition he had made of the rest rendering it unnecessary for them to do more than stand spectators of the action from the situation in which he placed them, while they prevented him from being surrounded by the enemy.

This victory was not gained without resistance. The field was long and obstinately disputed, and my master often obliged to lead his men to the charge: but numbers were at length forced to submit to superior valour; and the evening sun saw his banners wave in triumph, where those of his enemies had

menaced his destruction in the morning.—If the intrepidity with which he flew from rank to rank, and exposed himself to every shape of death in the action, had struck me with astonishment, I was not less affected by his conduct after it was over, when, cooling instantly from that enthusiasm of courage, he gave his orders for securing the glorious advantages he had gained, for taking immediate care of the unhappy sufferers, both friends and enemies without distinction, and for refreshing his own laboured soldiers, with all the serenity of peace.

CHAPTER XXII.

The happy fruits of victory. Chrysal finds new reason to admire his master. A stranger throws himself at his feet to implore justice. The story of the stranger.

THE transactions succeeding this event were but the common occurrences on such occasions, in which there is always something so cruel in the triumphs of the victors, and so severe in the sufferings of the vanquished, that, to a being free from the contradictory frenzies of mankind, the very thought is painful. His majesty's next care, after returning public thanks to Heaven on the very spot where its favour had been so signal, was to reward the behaviour of the soldiers. He praised, he promoted, he gave money to them, according to their different ranks and dispositions. Nor was his justice more bounteous in the reward of merit, than severe in the punishment of the want of it.

Under such a leader, what forces could withstand his soldiers? Under the discerning eye of such a prince, who was not actuated with ambition to distinguish himself in the execution of his duty, to obtain his favour; who dared to be guilty of disobedience or neglect, to incur his wrath? From the field of battle the victorious army was directly marched away to a siege, their success in which was to open them an opportunity of attacking another army of the enemy with advantage. Such a round of carnage was so shocking, that the virtues of my master were not a balance to the horrors of his service, and I began to wish for a release from such a scene of glory, when an unexpected occasion shewed me his character in a light that raised my admiration of him still higher.

As he was riding along the lines of his camp, the morning after the battle, reviewing a body of forces which he was detaching on a particular expedition, a man, in the habit of a private soldier, threw himself prostrate across his way, crying, 'Mercy! O great king! Have mercy on the sufferings of a wretch in despair, and shew yourself the substitute of heaven, by impartial justice.' The guards and attendants on the king would have spurned the suppliant out of the way, but his majesty, struck with the strangeness of the address, and imagining it must proceed from some extraordinary cause, interposed, and bidding him arise, 'What is the grievance you complain of?' said he, with a placid look and encouraging accent, 'or against whom do you solemnly implore justice?'

'O great and good king!' replied the stranger, with an air that bespoke something above his present appearance, 'my griefs are too many to be told so concisely as your present situation demands; and

‘ the justice I implore will require time to divest
‘ nature of its strongest passions.’ ‘ What can this
‘ mean?’ said the monarch in surprise, ‘ meet me
‘ directly at my tent, and expect that justice which
‘ the simplicity of truth shall be entitled to, without
‘ these laboured exclamations.’ The business which
his mind was intent upon prevented the king’s think-
ing any more of this affair, till he saw the man at his
return to his tent; when calling to him, ‘ Now,’ said
he,, ‘ speak your griefs with the boldness, but also
‘ with the guard of truth, and doubt not the redress
‘ of justice.’ Encouraged by these words, the
stranger, bowing his head, and pausing a moment, as
if to support his grief, began thus : ‘ So may the ear
‘ of heaven be ever open to thy petitions, O gracious
‘ king, as thou hast readily vouchsafed to hear my
‘ cries! So may its justice redress thy wrongs, as
‘ thou shalt deal with mine! Thou seest before thee
‘ the most wretched of mankind, whom despair has
‘ reduced to the necessity of flying from the defence
‘ of his country, and imploring justice for his private
‘ wrongs, from the declared foe of my sovereign.
‘ But let me not waste your time with fruitless com-
‘ plaints. My name, though spoken with some
‘ respect in my native country, is too obscure to have
‘ reached your ears, as my ancestors wisely confined
‘ their virtues to private life, nor ever laboured to
‘ emblazon their names with titles, that too often mar
‘ the happiness of their owners. In their steps I trod,
‘ till the wrath of heaven kindled the ambition of
‘ princes, and my country became the theatre of their
‘ contention. I then thought it my duty to arise in
‘ its defence, and the justice of my motive drew suc-
‘ cess on my attempts. But, while I vainly indulged
‘ the hope of being instrumental in delivering my
‘ country from the horrors of war, a foe broke into
‘ my house, thus destitute of its defender, and rifled

'all the treasure of my soul ! O my unhappy wife !
'my newly wedded, beauteous wife ! In vain didst
'thou call upon me in the hour of thy distress ! when
'the hand of the ravisher was twisted in thine hair,
'and the horrors of immediate ruin took possession
'of thy soul ! Thy protector was away, busied in the
'defence of others, while the wolf was ravaging his
'deserted fold.

'But whither does my distraction hurry me ? O
'pardon, gracious monarch, the inconsistencies of
'despair ! I will be brief ; I will not trespass on thy
'precious time.' He paused then a moment, till a
flood of tears eased the fulness of his heart, and then
proceeded thus :

'In the irruption of thy troops into Bohemia, about
'six months ago, my unhappy fortune led a party of
'them to my house, where the industry of my ances-
'tors, for ages of peace, fell a sacrifice to the wan-
'tonness of unrestrained devastation in one moment.
'but I complain not of this. It was my share of the
'indiscriminate calamity. Alas ! my woes are of
'another nature.

'The beauty of my wife struck the very hardened
'hearts of the soldiers with such reverence, that, in
'the fury of their outrage, they dared not to lay a
'sacrilegious hand on her : but this safeguard that
'protected her from rapine, only raised the more
'audacious rage of lust against her. The officer who
'commanded the party no sooner saw her, than,
'inflamed with brutal desire, he hurried her away
'with him to the camp, where imagination sinks in
'horror from the thought of what she may have
'suffered. The news of my misfortune soon reached

‘ me. No restraints of military duty were of force to hold me a moment; I flew to the scene of my ruin, where, having learned what I have already related to you, the greatness of my grief stupified me for a time, till the thought of my wife’s being still alive, and in the possession of her ravisher, roused me to a resolution of labouring for her relief. I, therefore, immediately entered in disguise into those very troops which had perpetrated my ruin, as I despaired of eluding the vigilance of thy officers by any other means. My stratagem had success; I soon learned that the officer who had brought my wife from my house, had been obliged to give her up to his general, who had demanded her as soon as she had been brought to the camp.

‘ A dawn of hope broke in upon me; though I could not gain any account of her after this: I thought that a man honoured with your particular esteem must be possessed of virtue; and this, I knew, must be her protection.

‘ Big with this hope, I found means to rejoin my own corps, where my absence was easily excused to a general who was my friend, and who readily yielded to my request of sending a trumpet, with a letter, to inquire for such a lady, and to desire that she might be treated with the tenderness and respect due to her sex and beauty, till she should be restored to her friends. But all my fond hopes fell to the ground, when an answer was returned, that the general knew not of such a person. Despair now stared me in the face; I saw all the horrors of my condition; and would that instant have returned in my disguise and stabbed the ravisher at the head of his forces, had I not reflected that my Theodora

‘ might be only exposed by such an action to new in-
‘ sults, and her life, perhaps, sacrificed in torture and
‘ ignominy to revenge.

‘ While I fluctuated in this distress, heaven inspired
‘ me with the thought of having recourse to your
‘ justice. Though he is the enemy of my sovereign,
‘ (said I) he is *a man* who feels the tender impulse of
‘ humanity; he is *a king* who delights in justice! I
‘ therefore reassumed my disguise, and entered into
‘ your camp as a deserter, the night before this battle,
‘ in which instinctive abhorrence of cowardice urged
‘ me to the duty of a soldier, and I happened to fight
‘ near your person; where, though I was sensible of
‘ my crime, in assisting the enemy of my sovereign, I
‘ had this palliative consolation, that the forces I en-
‘ gaged were not my fellow-subjects, but those of a
‘ perfidious ally, who entered into the war only to
‘ take his own advantage, when a proper opportunity
‘ should offer.

‘ This, O gracious king! is my unhappy story.
‘ This is the grievance for which I implore thy justice;
‘ for which I fought against the allies of my sove-
‘ reign yesterday; for which I threw myself before
‘ your horse’s feet this morning; for which I now
‘ call upon you by that power who has placed you as
‘ his substitute on earth, and will require an account
‘ of your stewardship. O justice! justice! justice!’

CHAPTER XXIII.

The king sends for the general, and orders the stranger to be confined till his arrival. Continuation of the story of the stranger. A new trial of the king's fortitude and activity of soul.

THE king heard out the stranger's story without interruption; and then, addressing himself to his officers and attendants round him, 'How unhappy,' said he, 'is the condition of princes, who must be answerable for the crimes of their servants, as if every man's own were not more than he can bear!

'I thought this man as upright as I knew him brave: I thought justice and mercy attempered valour in his breast. But perhaps he is wronged; let us not judge too hastily. Go,' turning to one of his officers, 'bid him come to me directly, nor tell him a word of the occasion. If he is guilty, he has forfeited my esteem for ever; but, if this complaint is only a calumny devised to exasperate me against one of my best friends, severely shall the author of it feel that justice which he so solemnly implores. Let him, therefore, be taken into custody till the event decides the doubt; but let him be treated with that humanity which his apparent distress stands in need of; nor let any hardship or indignity give justice the appearance of prejudice, or seem to intimidate his resolution.'

He then retired to enjoy those few moments of his life, which privacy enabled him to call his own. His majesty's commands were so punctually obeyed, that the general arrived at the camp the next day, where he immediately waited on his master, who received him with his usual familiarity; and having conferred with him for some time, on the situation of the affairs under his care, he led him to the door of his tent, where he had ordered the stranger to be brought to confront him, and then spoke thus, as if in continuation of his former discourse: 'It has ever been my strongest wish, my most positive command, that the calamities of this necessary war should fall as light as possible on the innocent subjects of those powers who have provoked it; particularly, I have always enjoined the strictest care to avoid every unnecessary devastation of private property, every appearance of cruelty or ill treatment to the defenceless weakness of the aged, of women, and children. What, then, must be my grief to find these orders disobeyed! to find that the ruins of the poor mark the marches of my armies, and the cries of private anguish arise to heaven against me! But these enormities shall not lie on my head for neglect of punishing them, nor be persisted in on the hope of impunity. Where my right hand guilty of such crimes, I would cut it off with my left, rather than it should infect my mind.'

The solemnity with which the king spoke these words struck all present with terror for the accused, who alone was ignorant of their design. The king saw the general concern, and, to let the impression sink the deeper, he paused some moments before he proceeded; then, turning short upon the general with a determined look and awful voice, 'Tell me,' said he, 'where is the woman whom thou hadst from the

‘ officer who brought her to the camp, when the forces
‘ under thy command entered into Bohemia? the
‘ woman whom the Bohemian generally sent to inquire
‘ after in vain ; and whom, I fear, thou didst deny, and
‘ still detainest for purposes too base to mention ?’

The unexpectedness of this charge deprived the unhappy criminal of all presence of mind : he stood abashed, and the confusion of his looks too plainly betrayed his guilt. The king saw his distress with the greatest concern ; but, superior to every private regard that could interfere with his sublimer character, ‘ Tell me where she is this instant ?’ said he, ‘ nor aggravate, by falsehood, crimes already too flagrant ; for I will know the whole of this black affair.’

‘ O, Sir !’ replied the general, throwing himself at his feet, ‘ I acknowledge my crime ; but I cannot bear thy wrath. Let me die this moment ; let that punishment expiate my guilt ; but afflict me no longer with thy displeasure, which is heavier than I can bear.’ ‘ Where is the woman ? Speak.’ ‘ Safe and inviolate in my tent. My entreaties have not been able to prevail on her virtue ; and my passion was too delicate to seek gratification by force.’— ‘ This moment let her be sent for ! and let the cause of her coming be concealed from her : I will learn the truth of this strange affair from herself. In the mean time, let her husband be treated with tenderness and respect. His misfortunes deserve compassion.’

The king had scarce said this, when an express arrived from another of his armies, which guarded his own dominions from the calamities of war, to inform him, that they had been repulsed with great loss,

in an attack upon the army of the enemy, which was now in full march to his capital. 'Thy will be done, O God!' said the king. 'Thy will be done.' And then, without any appearance of surprise or alteration in his looks, he instantly gave orders for a strong detachment of the army under his own command to march to the re-enforcement of that which had suffered this loss; and retired to consider of the alterations which this event must necessarily occasion in the operations of the campaign, and write his several orders accordingly, for he was his own secretary.—But, though his looks were thus easy, his heart severely felt this misfortune. 'O God!' said he, as soon as he was alone, 'when will thy wrath be appeased? When shall this people have rest? If I am the unhappy object of it, O let it fall on my head alone, but spare them! There is nothing certain in this life; nothing worth a wise man's care or regard. The victory with which it pleased thee to bless our arms so lately, raised my hopes to a prospect of peace. But the scene is now changed; and this advantage will raise the pride and malice of our enemies still higher, and make new deluges of blood necessary to bring them to a sense of reason and justice. Thy will be done, O Lord! But, as it is not yet declared, it is our duty to make use of the means which thou hast put into our power to accomplish that end which appears to us most just and advantageous. The horrors of the war are ready to burst upon my country, after all my endeavours to save it, and divert them elsewhere. But they shall not unopposed; I myself will stand in the breach, and defend my native country.

The serenity in the looks of the king had deceived the fears of the army, and every one prepared to obey him with the greatest alacrity: and, though this affair

put the whole camp in motion, it occasioned neither disorder nor confusion. Active as light, the king was every where, ordered every thing, saw every thing prepared, as well for the conveniencies of his soldiers as for the greatest possible expedition of their march. His armies might be vanquished, for they were but men; but to deject or disorder *his* mind was not in the power of any event.

CHAPTER XXIV.

Conclusion of the story of the stranger. His wife arrives and acquits the general. The king's speech to him, and generosity to the strangers. Chrysal changes his service, and goes with them. Some general remarks on the character of the king of Bulgaria, and the probable consequences of the war.

BY this time the Bohemian lady arrived, whom the king ordered to be brought directly to his tent. The first sight of this woman raised emotions in his heart which it had long been a stranger to. A beauty that exceeded imagination, and a sweetness and expression in her looks beyond description, soon made him sensible that all his heroism could not eradicate the passions of nature, and raised his pity both for the unfortunate general and for her husband.

He stood some moments gazing at her in silent astonishment; but recollecting himself, he addressed

thus, with the highest complacency and respect his look and accent: 'I have sent for you, madam, to this improper place for the delicacy of your sex, to learn from yourself the manner of your having been brought away from Bohemia, and the cause of your being since detained by the general of my army. Speak, madam; have you suffered any violence, any usage improper for your sex and merit? Speak with the assurance of truth, and expect justice and redress.'

'O mighty king!' said the lady, prostrating herself at his feet, 'oft have I heard of thy wondrous virtues; but never till this moment could I think that you could stoop so low as to take notice of my wretchedness. My sad story is no more than this—I was torn from my house by an officer of your army; I was hurried away to the camp by him, and there insulted by the base offers of his love; but heaven delivered me from him. Your general heard of my distress, and rescued me from his power: since which time I have had no personal cause of complaint, besides the indiscriminate calamities of the wars, which have robbed me of my husband, and left me a friendless widow in the hands of my enemies.' A flood of tears here stopped her utterance. The king, raising her from the ground, proceeded thus: 'A widow, madam, did you say? How long since have you lost your husband, and by what means did you hear of his death?'

'O sire!' replied she, 'as soon as I was freed from the horrors of brutal violence by the general, I wrote to my husband, with his permission, but received no answer to many, very many letters. This suspense was worse than death, and almost drove me to despair; till the general, at length, in

‘compassion to my misery, wrote himself to the commander of the army in which my husband had served, who returned him for answer that he had been killed about the time I was taken prisoner. O happy had been my lot had I shared his fate!’

‘I hope, madam,’ said the king, ‘you have received no injuries, that make you weary of life: I hope my general has not misbehaved himself to you.’ ‘O, sire!’ replied she, ‘I have received no injuries besides the irreparable loss of my husband, after which I can have no desire to live. As for the general, he has always treated me with the greatest compassion and tenderness. But now, will your majesty hear the voice of affliction? will you grant the only wish of an heart in despair? let me be conveyed to some religious house, where I may devote the sad remnant of my days to the service of heaven, far from the knowledge of the general and every other person who has ever heard of my name. I am sensible of the presumption of troubling you with this request; but to whom should we fly in the moment of distress except to heaven, or its vicegerents, especially those whose virtues give its seal to their authority.’

‘You may depend,’ returned the king, ‘upon every endeavour in my power to make you happy. But, madam, what meant the particular mention of the general, in your desire of being retired from the knowledge of the world? Pray be ingenuous; I hope he has not transgressed the limits of his own virtue and my command.’ ‘O sire!’ replied she, ‘mistake not the incoherencies of distraction: the general has always treated me with respect and tenderness; tenderness in excess, for nothing can be hid from you, was the only thing my soul could

'disapprove of his behaviour. He offered me honourable love; but, alas! my husband, my dear husband has possession of this heart! there he is buried! nor ever shall another love disturb his dear remembrance.'

'Madam, be comforted,' returned the king; 'such virtue as your's is the peculiar care of heaven; you may be happy yet; your husband may still be alive. in the disorders of these unhappy times many strange things happen: many who are thought to be alive are long since dead: many who have been long thought dead are found to be alive.'—'O sire! what can your words import? you would not jest with misery! you cannot speak in vain? O, am I yet to hope after so long despair?'—'Hope! always hope! but I shall send a proper person to explain my words.' Saying this, the king went to the door of his tent, and seeing her husband bursting with anxiety and impatience, 'Go,' said the monarch, 'in there, and see what blessings heaven reserves for virtue; go in alone; such meltings of the soul as must attend your meeting are too delicate to be exposed to other eyes.'

Then turning to the general, 'you have behaved nobly, my friend,' said he, 'in such temptation, which was almost too great for human virtue: had you injured such excellence, dear as you are to my heart, your life should have expiated the crime. But you have behaved nobly; in such a trial it is virtue to refrain from vice; the errors you have fallen into are but the weaknesses of nature; for to have been insensible of her beauty and perfections would have argued a deficiency in humanity.—But, beware, my friend, of indulging those passions; they enervate the heart, and wean the soul

insensibly from virtue ; the example is before *thine* eyes ; see how the violence of love has been *able* to urge the noble heart of this woman's husband to desert his charge, to enter into the service of his enemies, to fight against the dictates of his own conscience : think of this, and be more cautious for the future : the heart of a soldier has not *room* for love.'

The general, unable to reply, threw himself at his feet, and embraced his knees. ' I understand you,' said the king, smiling, ' your passion is not quite cured ; but you shall have employment to wear off this rust of idleness : return to your command this moment, and expect my further orders.'

The general obeyed, and the king addressing those around him, ' To be without fault,' said he, ' were not to be a man ; he is the best who has the smallest ; and allowance is to be made for human frailty, where the temptation is too great for human virtue.' As the king said this, the stranger and his wife came out together, and, throwing themselves at his feet, bedewed them with tears of grateful ecstasy : ' Arise,' said the monarch, ' and be happy in each other. I have restored you to your wife,' said he to the husband, ' and am ready to do you every further instance of justice which you can demand.' ' My soul is satisfied, O gracious king ; my soul is satisfied,' replied he : ' I ask no more of heaven, but to reward your goodness, your justice, and compassion.'—But there is one thing more to be considered,' said the king ; ' your estates were wasted ; your house burned by my soldiers ; I do not know the loss you may have suffered : take this, (giving him a large purse of gold) if that is not sufficient to repair it, when heaven, in mercy to





ADVENTURES OF A GUINEA.
*the bounty of the King of Bulgaria to the
vanquished foe.*

unkind, shall bid the calamities of war to cease, my life is spared, come to me, and I will remove every cause of your complaint. I do not ask you to enter into my service this war, but if your honour, your conscience, oppose it not, you may expect every encouragement due to your merit.'

'O sire! it is too much! your goodness overwhelms me! I will retire from the seat of war! I will implore heaven for your happiness and safety; and though I cannot, may not, fight for you, my arm shall never more be raised against you.'

His wife and he then withdrew to prepare for their departure, leaving the king no less happy in being the author of their happiness, than his goodness and bounty had made them.—I here quitted the service of this great prince, being in the purse which he gave to the stranger. The happiness which this pair experienced, in being thus unexpectedly restored to each other, is not to be expressed; the delicacy of their love being as much too sublime for description, as the sensuality of other scenes is beneath it. In a word, they wanted, they wished for nothing more, and, to secure the possession of what they enjoyed, they resolved to go and live privately with his brother, an ecclesiastic in Vienna, till the war should be at an end, and they might with safety return into their own country. This resolution was soon taken; they applied for passports that evening, and left the camp the next morning.

Sick as I was of such a scene of blood, I own I could not leave this prince without reluctance. I see you are desirous that I should give you a character of him; but I must not gratify your curiosity; what I have told you of his actions may convince you, that

he is the greatest of men : but humanity is too frail to be able to form any definitive judgment from his past, for his future life. Success may elevate; misfortune may sour his mind; and so overthrow that equality of it, which now rises him almost above man. His enemies are numerous and inveterate; his friends few, and hardly steady enough to be relied on : so that his dependance is solely on the attachment of his own subjects, and the strength of his own soul.

What will be the event of his fortune is not permitted me to conjecture? this only I must say, that, if he falls, it had been better for his country, for Europe in general, that he had never been born; as his struggles will exhaust their strength, and leave them an easy prey to a foe (the Turks) whose silence makes them not apprehensive of him, but who laughs in his heart to see them thus do his work, and destroy against each other the forces which might prevent his adding them to the number of the nations which already groan under his yoke. A design which he certainly meditates, and will not lose a moment to put into execution, when the opportunity he watches for is ripe.

CHAPTER XXV.

Chrysal arrives at Vienna, where he meets an old acquaintance. The history of his master's brother. His mission, labours, and success in England. He is sent to Peru. He disapproves of the precipitancy of the measures carried on there, and returns to Europe to prepare matters better.

IF the immediate scene of the war was shocking, the appearance of the countries around it was rather worse. In the former, the hurry of the action kept the mind too busy to attend to every minute distress; but here a dismal desolation opened a field for melancholy reflection, which every object added horrors to. The lands laid waste; the villages in ashes; the inhabitants perishing in the fields and high roads, of wounds, sickness, famine, and every various kind of misery, which the madness of human nature can inflict upon itself.

Through such monuments of military glory did we travel to Vienna, where my master and his wife were received with open arms by his brother, who insisted on their living in his house. The scene was here changed from the tumults and wants of war, to all the luxury and ease of peace. The moment I saw this ecclesiastic, I knew him to have been a member of the convent, to the head of which I belonged in Peru. This unexpected meeting, at such a distance, raised

a curiosity to know the cause of his removal from a place where I thought I had left him settled in all the happiness which riches and sensual pleasures could afford. It was not long before this curiosity was gratified ; for, the very evening after my master's arrival, he led him to a walk in his garden, and, sitting down under a tree on the brink of a fountain, addressed him thus :

‘ It is many years, my dearest brother, since I had
‘ the happiness of seeing you last. Various have
‘ been the climates I have gone through : various the
‘ vicissitudes of my fortune since that day ; from
‘ despair to exultation : from royal affluence and
‘ power to apprehension of perishing by famine, or in
‘ a prison. Wonder not at my words ; I will explain
‘ them to you in a short view of my life, which it is
‘ necessary I should give you, to prepare you for the
‘ participation of secrets, in which your assistance
‘ may be employed in establishing the most extensive
‘ and firm power which ever yet was raised upon this
‘ globe. You may remember, though you were then
‘ very young, that the representations of the Jesuits,
‘ to whose care our education was committed, made
‘ such an impression on me, that, in despite of my
‘ father’s threats and entreaties, I renounced my
‘ patrimony in your favour, and, taking only a small
‘ sum of money to defray the expenses of my journey,
‘ went directly to Rome with my tutor, where I
‘ readily obtained admission into the Society of
‘ Jesus, as soon as I had gone through the usual pre-
‘ paratory forms of education. Nothing remarkable
‘ happened to me during the first years of my being
‘ professed, my studies engrossing my whole time
‘ and attention ; in which I made such a proficiency,
‘ that the general of the order thought it proper to
‘ send me into the world, in the service of the society.

'The first stage of my mission was to England, 'whither I went, to counteract the poison which was 'dispensing against us, by an apostate of our order, 'who, under the pretence of employing his abilities in 'the service of the society, had been admitted to all 'the libraries, and suffered to take extracts from all 'the records of the church. But no sooner had he 'made such a collection as he thought sufficient for 'his purpose, than he fled to England, his native 'country, where, renouncing his vows and religion, 'he turned the weapons which had been entrusted in 'his hands for the defence of the church against her, 'employing the abstracts he had made to the defama- 'tion of the character, and subversion of the power, 'of the *Holy Sec.*

'My success in this my first negotiation (for, in 'defiance of truth, reason, conscience, and common 'sense, by plausible insinuations, by forged certi- 'ficates, or, which was the same thing, by certificates 'from people who would certify any thing in their 'own favour, against a man who attacked the very 'fundamentals of their power; by bribery, suborna- 'tion, perjury, and every kind of artifice, I, in a great 'measure, defeated his design, and overturned the 'authority of his work;) my success, I say, in this 'difficult undertaking, for he had gone out from 'among ourselves, and was versed in our whole 'science, encouraged the order to continue me in that 'mission, but in an higher office.

'The laws, religion, and government of the nation 'were now the objects assigned to my attacks, in 'which I laboured with various success for some 'years, in every character which human volubility 'could assume. I was a quaker; a methodist; a

‘ deist; I wrote for the ministry, or against the government, as the prevailing humour of the day promised attention to my writings. The sea which flows around that island being not more unsteady than the minds of the inhabitants, nor more liable to be ruffled by the winds of heaven, than they are by every breath of popular rumour. I proceeded thus for some time, with various success, till, happening to disclose some secret transactions, which were known there only to the persons concerned, and had been communicated to me from abroad, in order to sow dissension between the people and their governors, to the ruin of both, the conscious parties were alarmed, and my intelligence traced so secretly, that I had difficulty to escape by flight from an ignominious death, which the resentment of those, whose ruinous machinations I had thus discovered to their country, would certainly have brought me to. My failing in this attempt, in which thousands had failed before me, was no prejudice to my character, nor in the least lessened me in the opinion of the order. On the contrary, the efforts I had made were so daring, so deeply laid, and so well conducted, that I was now judged a proper person to be employed in greater matters.’

‘ I was therefore sent, the next year, to what is called the Spanish world, but is really the Jesuits’ heaven in America, where matters of the highest moment were just ripe for execution. When I came there, I found things in a forwardness too great for their foundation; the eagerness of some of our people hurrying on events before proper preparation had ensured their success. In short, they were ready to revolt from Spain and Portugal, before they had made provision to support themselves

in such an attempt. They wanted European officers, soldiers, arms, and ammunition, for on the natives there is no dependance; but, above all, the time was unfavourable. The powers they meant to attack in this vital part were at peace with all the world, and consequently at liberty to turn their whole force against them.

'I, therefore, counselled them to moderate their zeal, and wait till better preparations, and a more favourable minute, should make their success more probable. But they would not hearken to my advice, but attributed it to envy, or want of resolution: on which I left them to their own ill fortune, and hastened home to provide a remedy for evils which I could not prevent.'

CHAPTER XXVI.

Continuation of the Jesuit's discourse. He shews the promising situation of his affairs at present. The concise method by which Spain and Portugal are to be brought into the war with England. He proposes to his brother to join in the general, that he may accomplish his particular, design.

'THE event has confirmed my opinion; by striking too soon, the blow has been ineffectual. However, things, though disconcerted by this precipitancy, are not quite ruined; and care may yet repair the effects of their folly.'

‘ In this cause I now labour, in concert with others
‘ of my brethren in every court of Europe; and I
‘ have the satisfaction to think that we have a pros-
‘ pect of success. The only obstacle that retards us
‘ at present is the difficulty of making the courts of
‘ Spain and Portugal enter into the war against Eng-
‘ land. Could we bring this to bear, our work would
‘ be easy. The mighty naval power of England
‘ will not only prevent their sending over forces to
‘ oppress us before we can establish our power, but
‘ will also assist us to carry on the war, to share in
‘ the spoil, and distress our enemies. But, while the
‘ present kings are on the thrones of those kingdoms,
‘ it will be scarcely possible to bring our designs to
‘ perfection, they are so utterly averse to hazarding
‘ the consequences of a war with a nation from whose
‘ alliance they receive such advantages. The first
‘ thing, therefore, which we do, must be to remove
‘ them. The former has already swallowed his
‘ death, though the process will be so slow as to
‘ escape suspicion. With the other such caution is
‘ not necessary, nor is there time for it; the arm
‘ is already lifted up against him, for a stroke that
‘ will terrify the world. When these obstacles are
‘ removed, the execution of our designs will meet
‘ with no further delay. The successors to these
‘ princes we have secured such an influence on, that
‘ we can work them to whatever we please, and
‘ have already poisoned their minds with prejudices
‘ against England.

‘ To provide officers of approved fidelity and ex-
‘ perience to command our forces, is the next objec-
‘ of our case. Shall I candidly own to you, that
‘ such a length of time and multiplicity of affairs has
‘ almost obliterated all my remembrance of my family
‘ but the moment I heard your name mentioned

‘with the respect due to your merits in the present
‘war, a flood of infant fondness melted my heart, and
‘tears of tenderest joy acknowledged that I had a
‘brother. I immediately gave notice to our general,
‘and by his order am empowered to treat thus
‘with you.

‘On my engagement for your fidelity (for your
‘abilities are known to be far superior to any that
‘shall oppose you) I am commissioned to offer you
‘the supreme command of all our forces in this great
‘undertaking.—With what joy I make this offer, the
‘pleasure that you would feel in serving your brother
‘can best enable you to judge.

‘Though I will tell you further, that mine is raised
‘higher than common feelings can convey a notion
‘of. I have hitherto only unfolded the general design
‘of our order, in which I am but a party, though a
‘principal and material one. But shall I tell you
‘also, that my designs terminate not with their’s : as
‘your command will make you master of all their
‘forces ; and, as power is the consequence of that,
‘you will be able to confer it where you please : or,
‘indeed, rather to retain it in your own hands, while
‘I shall only ease you of the trouble of conducting
‘and establishing the policy of an infant state. This
‘was my motive for writing to you so pressingly to
‘come to me to Vienna. This is the end which I
‘have been labouring for all my life. I am advanced
‘in years, and shall never marry to beget an heir ;
‘you are young, and will have many. Assist me ;
‘therefore, to acquire our throne which must descend
‘to your posterity—a throne, which, by holding it
‘at first as under the sovereignty of the order, will
‘soon be established by them, even beyond their
‘own power to shake.

I have now unbosomed myself to my brother, with all the confidence of so near an alliance. You will, perhaps, wonder at my openness with one whom I have not seen since he was a child. But I know your character in life; and, above all, I know myself safe from being betrayed, because the information would not be received. Consider, therefore, whether you will embrace this offer; whether you will reign in a splendour that will dazzle the eyes of the greatest prince in Europe, or live here in slavery and dependance! The alternative will not admit a moment's hesitation: I see you yield. I will acquaint our general with it; you and your wife, shall remain here with me, till the proper time for all our departure comes, which will depend on circumstances not yet settled. In the mean time we shall have an opportunity of conferring on these subjects together, and preparing all things for our undertaking in a manner that shall ensure success.'

Though my master made no reply to this proposal that testified the least disapprobation of it, I could easily see that many parts of the scheme affected him with the strongest abhorrence; at the same time that the offer of royalty was a temptation which shook his resolution, and almost vanquished his virtue. His brother saw the conflict in his heart with pleasure: had he yielded readily, and without reluctance, he should have withdrawn his confidence from such a depravity of soul; and the struggle convinced him that he was his own, and he knew that man, as well as the woman, who deliberates between virtue and vice is lost.

CHAP. XXVII.

The Jesuit proceeds to shew the rise of the war in Germany, and explains the motives of the several parties engaged in it, as also of the neutrality observed by some particular states.

THE Jesuit the next evening resumed the conversation, and, to remove every doubt of success that might deter his brother from joining in his designs, proceeded thus: 'My brother!' said he, 'there is nothing so disgusting to a rational man, as the mistakes and blunders which passion, prejudice, pride, and ignorance produce in the conduct of all the courts in the world, even our's at Rome not being quite exempt from them, though the freest of all others. As for this of Vienna, it is, at present, a scene where every absurd, every destructive passion rules. Among these must you seek for the sources of the present war that lays all Germany waste. Female pride, piqued by some slighting expressions from one esteemed inferior in rank, and stimulated by a desire of recovering by surprise what had been yielded, or rather extorted, by treaty, influenced this sagacious court in conjunction with that of Saxony, to form designs against the king of Bulgaria. But the vigilance of that monarch prevented their designs, of which he had timely notice: and, before their schemes were ripe for execution,

‘ he boldly attacked them, and so anticipated the
‘ blow meditated against him.

‘ So daring a step surprised all Europe, and influenced many who were unacquainted with the motives of it to take part against him, while more did for private advantage. Of these France was the first ; who, concluding a league with her ancient enemy, in despite of family animosity, has entered into a war that seems not to concern her at all ; nor, indeed, does it in the obvious consequences of it. But she has further designs in view ; and, in return for the assistance she gives to crush this prince, is to receive from the house of Austria those dominions in the Netherlands, which have cost the greatest part of Europe such deluges of blood for above a century to keep out of her hands : while this court, inattentive to the consequences that must attend France’s getting possession of these long contested places, has blindly, basely entered into a league with a family that has been labouring her ruin for so many ages, and betrayed the confidence of all the states who supported her in them. The other nations who have acceded to this alliance have acted from motives merely mercenary in the first view, fighting for the pay promised them by the Imperial and French courts, the latter of whom has stretched her generosity so far, as to undertake supporting her new ally with money as well as men.

‘ But it is not improbable that they may all be disappointed, and the king of Bulgaria not only escape the ruin meditated against him, but also retort it on the machinators ; one of the principal of whom, the Saxon, has already had abundant cause to repent of his undertaking. As for this court, it now fights

' *pro aris et focis*, as may be said; for if that hero is
' victorious, nothing less is to be expected here, than
' the total loss of the imperial dignity, of whose autho-
' rity there want not many instances of the most
' flagrant abuse, to vindicate such a revolution. But,
' of all the effects of this unnatural combination,
' there is not one more base than the ingratitude with
' which this court has behaved to that of England,
' whose blood and treasure have often supported it
' against the very power of France, when every other
' human assistance has deserted it; and established
' it in its present grandeur, almost at the price of its
' own ruin. But now all those benefits are forgot;
' and because England will not tamely look on (if
' not, perhaps, assist) to see the fabric, which she has
' erected at so vast an expense, overturned to gratify
' a blind caprice, and a prince, allied to her by blood
' and interest, sacrificed by avarice and pride, all
' her former services are held as cancelled, and her-
' self treated with the rancour of the greatest enemy.

' While England thus supports her character of
' generosity, and acts with prudence, the Dutch, as
' if infatuated, stand quietly to see the *barrier*, which
' cost themselves even so much in erecting for their
' defence, thus given away to the very power against
' whom it was erected; and who, they cannot be
' insensible, means nothing less than their ruin, as
' soon as it can strike the blow, to effect. But such
' is the degeneracy of that people from every senti-
' ment of virtue, public and private, that they will
' not give up the opportunity of present gain, to save
' their state from so evident, so imminent ruin; vainly,
' perhaps, expecting that England will still pursue
' the schemes of *knight-errantry* which have so long
' made her fight the quarrels of her neighbours, while
' they themselves looked on almost as if unconcerned

‘ in the event ; and will be moved by the cries of the
‘ *distressed states* to remedy the mistakes and repair
‘ the losses of their High-Mightinesses.

‘ While every other state in Europe is thus employed, Spain and Portugal enjoy all the advantages
‘ of peace, prudently taking no part in a war which
‘ does not in the least concern them. Of these, the
‘ former, like the old lion in the fable, is only terrible
‘ to ignorant apprehension on account of what it has
‘ been, and is now pacific and harmless, because it
‘ no longer has the power of doing harm. Sensible
‘ of this weakness, it sleeps in the shadow of a
‘ mighty name, and mixes not in disputes which must
‘ only draw it into difficulties, without any prospect of
‘ advantage to engage in the attempt. But it must
‘ not be let to enjoy this state of tranquillity, so contrary
‘ to our designs, any longer ; and, as the present
‘ government there is determined to persist in the
‘ measures that support it, it must be overturned, to
‘ make way for those who will be more obedient to
‘ our advice. A method which we must also pursue
‘ with Portugal ; for, though its strength is almost
‘ beneath the rank of an independent, much less a
‘ royal state, yet, upon the account of its wealth,
‘ which might hire forces to oppress us, it must be
‘ worked up to take the same step, and break with
‘ England, as I have said before, to which it has
‘ already made large advances, by several most
‘ unjust and injudicious encroachments, on the trade
‘ of that nation.

‘ As for the war between France and England, it
‘ arises solely from the contradictions between the
‘ interest of the two nations, which nature has set in
‘ an opposition impossible to be reconciled. But the
‘ seat of this war is so remote from hence, that it

ould have no influence on the affairs of Europe, did not the successes of the English prevent France from giving the assistance that was expected, and might be effectual to the designs of this court, for they have so absolutely ruined her trade, that she is no longer able to fulfil her engagements with Russia, particularly, and the several courts of Germany, whom she undertook to pay, for fighting the quarrel of her ally ; so that the former, who had no other motive but the money for entering into the war at first, will of course, and the latter must of necessity, desert that cause, not having any internal support of their own, since this has failed them. Indeed the Russians, finding all the mighty promises which were made them vanish into air, begin to be sick of their bargain already, and long again for the solid advantages of their alliance with England. As for this court, it is now making its last effort, and, if this is eluded or defeated, it has no other resource, than shamefully to receive the law from a prince, upon whom it made so unjust an attempt.'

CHAPTER XXVIII.

Conclusion of the Jesuit's Discourse. His system of morality and religion. His brother yields to his arguments, with some particular exceptions. Chrysal changes his service.

‘ THIS short but distinct view of the present situation of the affairs of Europe must convince you, that a general peace must soon be concluded, the parties that would, not being able to continue the war much longer ; and therefore *we* must be speedy in the execution of our designs, or the opportunity will be lost, for it would be impossible to make even the pride of Spain, or the avarice of Portugal, take the measures we want at a time when England is disengaged from other enemies. I have drawn this sketch to shew you that *our* designs are not rashly undertaken, but the result of the deepest knowledge and insight into things. This must remove every scruple that may arise from doubts of success. But there is one thing more, which must be explained, to remove prejudices of another nature, which may perhaps represent our undertaking in a wrong light to you ; and this is to evince the justice of it, and the means designed to accomplish its success. Of this matter you must not pretend to judge by the vulgar rules obtruded by design upon the ignorance of the world, and which no wise man observes, who has it in his power to break them

with impunity. Man is thrown into this world by nature, to obtain his own happiness by every means within his power: this is too sublime a truth for vulgar knowledge, as it would put an end to the delusion by which the wise few keep the herd of mankind in ignorance and subjection.

But that it is really the truth, and as such made the rule of action by all the states and princes in the world, will not be denied, nor even doubted by any one who has considered the systems of policy and government which are, and ever have been, established by them.

For if it was not an undoubted maxim, that power constitutes the rule of justice, how inconsistent would be the actions of all mankind! How could a state devise laws to punish the man with death, who goes into his neighbour's field, and steals his ox, and, at the same time, sends armies to invade, spoil, and depopulate the territories of their neighbours? How could a poor pirate be hanged for robbing a single ship, and fleets immediately after sent avowedly to destroy the whole trade of the same nation? If a state of war is alleged, that is the very imposition of which I spoke. Every man has as good a natural right to declare war with his neighbour, as the state he lives in has with another state; and every right that is not natural is an usurpation, and void. This is the true philosophy of life, stripped of the idle dreams of enthusiasm, and selfish misrepresentations of design.

As for religion, look over the whole race of mankind, and try if you can find one who practises what he professes: this is an incontestible proof, that

' none believe it; as it is also, that there is no necessity they should : else would the want of faith, and obedience be punished by that power which is thought to enjoin them ; whereas, on the contrary, it is always most successful, as it affords means which those restraints forbid. I observed that, at the beginning of our conversation on this subject, you seemed shocked at my mentioning the necessity of removing the persons who oppose our designs, and particularly when I said the Spaniard had swallowed his death. But this is all prejudice, and want of extending your view beyond the surface of things. For how much better is the method we take, of striking the single person against whom our design is levelled, than that pursued, not only without reproach, but even encouraged by applause, of involving the innocent with the guilty (innocent I mean with respect to us) and laying waste whole nations to bring a prince to death? How much better would it have been for this court to have removed the king of Bulgaria by poison, or a dagger, than to have destroyed millions, as they have done, in the pursuit of his death, by this destructive war? This is demonstration! this is conviction to him who dares open his eyes to see it! Judge now of our undertaking by this invariable system, and shew me one objection to it.'

This long dissertation was not delivered at one time; it was the substance of many conversations, by which the Jesuit so wrought upon his brother, that he resigned himself wholly to his disposal, and entered sincerely into his designs. The only objection he made (and that was not urged against him) was, to being any way concerned in the compendious warfare of the society, the prejudice of education.

ing still so strong with him, that he could not yet abstract things so nicely, as to consider assassination any other light than as a crime.

I had been in this state of speculation about a week, for my master never stirred out, as he made known his excuse for quitting the service, when his brother having occasion for some money to send to Lisbon, on the grand design, the bag in which I was, is ordered for that service; the brothers having joined their fortunes, as well as their endeavours, in the promotion of it. I now changed my master again, and set out for Lisbon, in the possession of one of the society, who was to deliver us to a particular person there.

CHAPTER XXIX.

Crusoe proposes a political scheme, that will never take place, to settle the peace of Germany. A short view of the war between the French and English, with the motives of the former for transferring the seat of it into Germany. Insidious ambition meets a just disappointment.

IN so complicated an undertaking, there necessarily must be a great number of engines at work, and in any different places, upon the regularity and agreement of whose motions depends the success of the whole. The person by whom I was sent to Lisbon,

was not to go directly thither, but to take a large circuit, and call at several places in his way, to see that all moved in concert, and every thing was properly prepared for the main action, that precipitancy should not defeat the design a second time.

It is not necessary to recount all the circumstances of this tour, which, for the most part, were no more than the common occurrences upon such occasions. I shall therefore take notice only of such few, as, for their singularity and importance, may deserve attention. As to the secret motive of the journey (for that alledged was only to inspect, as usual, into the private concerns of the order) it has been already so well explained, that it is sufficient to say every thing exceeded expectation, and gave the strongest assurance of success.

As the war had overspread all Germany, it was impossible for my master to avoid falling in with some of the armies, which were then in the field; but this gave him no concern: he was blessed with one of those ready geniuses, that can put on any appearance so naturally, as to deceive suspicion itself; besides that he had passports, under one character or another, from every power engaged in the war. The first event worth remark that occurred to us (for the nature of war and its operations in general have been sufficiently explained before) was in the army of the allies of the king of Bulgaria, into which my master entered, in the character of a Jewish agent. This army was composed of the forces of several of the smaller German states (who were hired by the English to defend their own liberties) a small number of Bulgarians, and a considerable body of English troops.

You are surprised to hear that people should require to be paid to fight for themselves in so interesting a cause; but so it is; and so it will continue to be, while a number of little sovereigns assume the state, and live in the luxury of the greatest kings: for, as their own revenues are insufficient to support the expense, they will be ready to sell themselves to the first that offers, for an immediate supply, without looking forward to, or regarding the consequences of, such inconsiderate, such wretched venality. They have, indeed, this excuse, which the general depravity of mankind seems to justify their alledging, that, as their ruin would involve greater states in some inconveniences, they find these will rather submit to this gross imposition, than suffer them to be swallowed up by others, who would grow too powerful by this accretion.

Base as such a prostitution of principle must appear, it has been so successfully practised (and this not by those poor princes alone, the Austrians and Spaniards occasionally, and the Dutch constantly availing themselves of it) that England in particular has been drawn in to bear a part, from which, by her situation, she seemed exempted by heaven, in every war that has distracted Europe for some ages, to an expense of blood and treasure, which is already severely felt, and must, if pursued much further, involve it in the very ruin it thus strives to avert.

There is one, and one only remedy for this; but this is attended with difficulties, which will prevent its being applied, till the evil itself shall work its own redress—a period, that, to human foresight, seems not far distant at present. This is taking away the power of these petty tyrants, who disgrace the name of sovereign, and uniting their territories into one state,

of strength sufficient to support itself. For, while those princes have any power left, they will, consistently with their present systems of policy, oppose this; but the manner in which they have conducted themselves in this war, if not speedily altered, will so effectually reduce that power, that they will be no longer able to resist, but must passively submit to the dominion of whoever will undertake their support: an event as much to be desired by their own immediate subjects, as by the other states, which thus suffer by their absurd and iniquitous conduct; as the severest form of one government is preferable to the capricious rule of several tyrants, whose poverty and pride put them upon every method of making the most of their wretched people, without any regard to the established rules of justice, or even the common rights of humanity. The usual objection to this expedient, of its overturning the liberty of Germany, which they make so great a noise about, is of no weight; that boasted liberty being, at present, no more than the power of those sovereigns to treat their subjects as they please, with impunity, the restraining of which within just bounds would really be establishing, not overturning, the liberty of mankind.

As to the war in which the English were at this time engaged, it was not to be ascribed solely to this cause. The insatiable ambition of the French had prompted them to strive for the enlargement of their territories in America, where they already possessed an hundred times more than they were able to make any use of. The possessions of the English in that part of the globe were also uselessly extensive; however, the boundaries having been settled between them, usurpations were not to be tolerated, consistently with the honour of the state; beside, if they were taken no notice of in the beginning, they might

in time, possibly be extended to the profitable and inhabited parts of their dominions. On this account a war was kindled between those powerful and jealous neighbours, the seat of which was properly transferred, by the English, to the place in which the attack had been made upon them; where the superiority of their naval force gave them such advantages, that they not only recovered the places which had been taken from them, but also absolutely overturned the French power in those boundless regions, and pursued their conquests in every other part of the world where the French had made settlements, to the utter ruin of their naval power and trade.

As it was impossible for the French to recover these losses directly, and the ambition and avarice which first gave occasion to the war was strengthened by pride, to prevent their making the concessions on which they might have obtained peace, they removed the seat of the war into Germany, and attacked certain powers there, with whom England was so inseparably connected, that it could not avoid flying to their assistance, in expectation of having all their own losses restored, in return for those territories, if they could get possession of them, which the number of their own land-forces, and the alliances they knew they could make among the venal Germans, gave them hopes of accomplishing; a scheme not ill founded, as every motive of honour and justice obliged the English to protect and indemnify an innocent people, attacked thus solely upon their account. As the French, at the same time that they made this attack, had also entered into the confederacy against the king of Bulgaria, as has been already mentioned, this necessarily cemented the alliance between him and England still closer, and made him join as many of his troops as he could

possibly spare to the army raised by the English, upon this indispensable occasion ; from which conduct he received this immediate advantage, that his army engaged the attention of the French, and prevented their joining their forces to the number of his enemies ; besides a considerable assistance in money, to enable him to support his own troops. It was necessary for me to give you this short explanation of the nature of this war, though such digressions are contrary to my design and inclination, that you may be able to form a proper judgment of the extraordinary occurrences I am going to relate to you.

The army through which my master was obliged to pass, as I have said, though paid by England, and the flower of it composed of Britons, was commanded by a German general, in disgraceful acknowledgment of the want of military merit equal to such a charge in the natives : though to palliate the disgrace, and satisfy the jealousy of the English, they had the imaginary privilege of being immediately under a commander of their own, and subject only to their own laws, in all things, except the operations of the war, when they were of necessity to obey the German commander in chief. Such distinctions create animosities, often more prejudicial than the inconveniences they were meant to prevent. Accustomed to live in the most luxurious plenty and ease, and valuing themselves upon the riches of their country, which supported the whole army, the English found fault with the victuals and accommodations provided for them, and treated the German troops, with whom they were joined, with contempt ; who in return affected to despise their delicacy, and took the advantage of their want of knowledge of the language of the country to give such impressions of them, as prevented the people from bringing them in provi-

mons, with that care and cheerfulness which their prompt and generous payment deserved; by which means they suffered the inconveniencies or scarcity and dearth, while the others abounded. Though such feuds among the men threatened the most dangerous consequences, those whose authority ought to put a stop to them were far from striving to restore that harmony, which alone could give success to their designs. The commander in chief either overlooked, as beneath his notice, or was prevented, by his attention to the military operations of the campaign, from taking notice of those misunderstandings; and the English commander, ambitious probably of the supreme command, which he imagined he might easily obtain, if he could make the other sufficiently obnoxious to the English, inflamed them by every artifice he could use.

Nor did he stop here: whenever he was summoned, in consequence of his high station, for he was second in command in the whole army, to attend councils for concerting the operations of the war, he made it his constant practice to contradict whatever was proposed by the commander, and to treat all his schemes with contempt, without ever attempting to offer any thing himself in their place; and thus he did the more effectually, as he was a ready and powerful speaker, and perfectly versed in the theory of war; whereas the commander was a thoughtful reserved man, of few words, whose whole life had been spent in action, and who could more easily have executed than explained his designs. The consequences of this disagreement were very detrimental while it lasted, and must, in the end, have proved fatal to the army, had not the German, without ever attempting to discuss the affair with his wordy antagonist, written directly to the British sovereign, to inform him that he was

so constantly opposed in all his designs by the English general, that it was impossible for him to do anything of moment; wherefore he desired either that he might have leave to resign his command, or that his authority freed from this vexatious and dangerous opposition, concluding his letter with these remarkable words: 'Though in a multitude of counsels there is said to be much safety, yet, in the operations of war, if many are privy to the counsels which direct them, there never can be that secret agreement, and dispatch, which are indispensable to success.'—

The monarch, who was no stranger to the capricious and unquiet disposition of the English general, sensible of the justice of the German's complaint, and immediately removed the cause of it, by giving him an unlimited power to carry on the war as he should appear best to his own private judgment without consulting with, or being liable to be opposed by, any other person. It may be thought, that the entire removal of the English general would have been a readier and more effectual method; but the nature of the English government made this quite so proper, as he was descended from one of the most illustrious and powerful families in the kingdom, and a member of the senate, in which his rank and speaking gave him such weight, that it was judged best to avoid giving him cause for exerting his authority in opposition to the measures of the government, by removing him from an employment which he solicited with all his power and interest; especially as the immense expense of this army began to grow so oppressive to the people, and ready to receive any impression against it. But the event shewed that this caution was ineffectual, and productive of more evils than that which it was made use of to avoid.

Accordingly, from the time the German general perceived this enlargement of his authority, he planned to come without ever consulting any person, or communicating the least hint of them, till the moment of their being put in execution, when he gave his orders with the peremptory precision of an absolute sovereign. This was a severe stroke to the English general, who had been accustomed to receive the very commands of his king, and, therefore, could badly brook such subordination to a man whom he affected to hold in contempt, for the simplicity of his understanding. However, as it was too late to dispute, he obeyed in sullen silence, resolved to seize the first opportunity of defeating his orders, since he could no longer disconcert his king; and to take hold of the least miscarriage, to bring him in the British senate at the end of the campaign, where he doubted not but he should be able to represent things in such a light, as to get him dismissed from the command, which must of course fall upon himself.

My master received from a Jesuit the night he arrived at the camp, who, to ingratiate himself the more effectually with the French king, to secure his interest and protection, should any unforeseen accident defeat their design, had entered in the service of the English general, as his *valet de chambre*, for the better opportunity of discovering the secrets of the allies, which he gave constant intelligence of to their enemies.

CHAPTER XXX.

A deep-laid scheme disconcerted by an accidental victory. Treachery falls into the pit it had dug for another. The true way to satisfy English soldiers. The disgraced commander's motives for appealing from the will of his sovereign to a public trial. His hopes are again disappointed, and he confirms his own ruin.

THE very next morning after my master's arrival in the camp, an event happened that astonished all Europe. The French army was so greatly superior to that of the allies, that the general was obliged to be entirely on the defensive; nor had his consummate experience and indéfatigable assiduity been able to prevent their taking several advantages by their numbers, and forcing him to a retreat that seemed to threaten the loss of the country he was to defend. But, through all these difficulties, he persisted steadily in his own plan, and preserved his attention cool, and ready to take any advantage that might offer.

Accordingly, that morning, upon notice of some motions of the enemy that indicated a design of attacking him, he ordered a small, but select body of forces, almost all of them English, to advance towards them, and receive their charge, while he should make a proper disposition of the rest of his army to give the enemy battle, or make a secure retreat as he

should see expedient ; but the unexampled behaviour of those few brave troops soon changed the face of the affair ; for, not satisfied with repelling the attack of the main body of the enemy's army, they intrepidly advanced to charge them in their turn, which they did with such irresistible valour, that the French were thrown into confusion, and obliged to abandon the field of battle.

I have said before, that the transactions in a battle are so complicated, and so confounded with each other, that it is impossible to reduce them into the regularity of a satisfactory description ; I shall, therefore, enter no farther into the account of this, than just as it concerns the conduct of the English general, which I had a sufficient opportunity of observing, my master having placed himself near his person, in company with his friend.

The moment the commander in chief received an account of the unexpected effects of the valour of the troops which he had ordered to march towards the enemy, he sent to the English general, who commanded all the horse in that wing, to advance and sustain them. It is impossible to describe his situation, when a messenger from the general informed him, that a part of the army was engaged in the plain that lay before him, and ordered him to march the cavalry under his command to their assistance. Surprise and resentment at such a measure's being taken, without his having the least previous notice of it, almost deprived him of his reason ; but he recovered himself in a moment, and drawing his sword with an air of indignation and discontent, was just preparing to obey the orders he had received, when another messenger arrived, and delivered them, but with some variation. This the general instantly perceived,

and resolved to take advantage of, to justify his obeying neither, in hopes, by that means, to accomplish his scheme of defeating the measures of his commander, without any regard to the consequences that must attend such a conduct. Accordingly, instead of advancing, as he had before prepared to do, he entered into a debate with the messengers about this difference in their orders, and, finding each positive in those he delivered, he coolly determined to go himself to the general for an explanation of them; by trifling away the critical moment in which manner he expected that the part of the allied army which was engaged would be beaten for want of proper and timely support, when he might have the glory of covering their retreat, and saving the whole army from a defeat, and the pleasure of effectually ruining the character of the general, by attributing the whole misfortune to his not taking the advice of his council, or even communicating his designs to them in proper time.

Such a scheme was but too likely to succeed, had not the unparalleled bravery of the troops, whom he thus designed to have sacrificed to his ambition and resentment, disappointed it beyond all human probability, as I have observed before, and actually beaten the whole army of the enemy, though ten times their number, out of the field, while he was taking advantage of a pretext to abandon them to ruin.

The situation of his mind, when, upon his coming up to the general, he heard the victory was won, may be better conceived than described. The cool, distant reception he met with gave him notice of the storm which was ready to burst over his head: and he saw that the scheme he had laid so deeply to perpetrate the ruin of another, had inevitably worked his

own, as the very accusations which he had intended to bring against his general would now recoil upon himself with tenfold force. According to his fears, the general next morning publicly passed an implicit censure on his conduct, which he saw received with such universal approbation, that he thought it proper to resign his command, for fear of personal insult from the incensed soldiers, and return home, where he did not doubt but the interest of his family, and his own eloquence and address, would vindicate his character at least, if not still accomplish his designs against the general. Though I lost sight of him at this time, yet, as I had an opportunity afterwards of coming to the knowledge of the whole affair, I think it better, and less trouble to us both, to continue the account here, than break my narrative with it in another place.

The first construction which was put upon his conduct was, that it proceeded from cowardice; an opinion, which the cruelty of his temper to those under his command gave no small weight to, from this generally just maxim, that *the cruel are always cowards*; and which many insignificant parts of his former conduct were alleged to confirm: but I have shewn that it sprang from another much less justifiable cause; I say, less justifiable, as cowardice is a natural infirmity, which a man is no more accountable for than for his being born blind or lame; but such a scheme as his was a premeditated crime, and aggravated with the blackest circumstances.

The first consequence of his quitting the army was a perfect harmony between the English and Germans; the glory they had acquired upon this occasion raising the spirits of the former so high, that they thought no more of the inconveniences they had complained

of before, but readily followed the example of their new commander, whom they all loved, and entered into friendship with their fellow-soldiers, as if there had never been any jealousy between them; who, on the other hand, were so struck with their gallant behaviour, and so sensible of the advantages gained by it, that they no longer accused them of improper delicacy, or strove to do them ill offices with the natives of the country, as before. But what completed the happiness of the English, was the commander-in-chief's indulging their natural thirst for glory under their present commander, by giving them the post of honour upon all occasions, and taking public notice of their valour, the honour of which they esteemed a sufficient recompence for the severest fatigues and dangers: an indulgence which it was not in his power to give before, as their late commander had always opposed their being exposed to danger, out of an affected regard to them, as if they were of greater consequence than the rest of the army, or joined it only to make a figure, and not to do any service.

As soon as the late general arrived in England, his sovereign, who had been informed of the whole affair, immediately deprived him of his many very lucrative and honourable employments, and dismissed him his service; an instance of clemency which few other princes would have shewn, and which regard to the merits of his illustrious ancestors alone procured for him. But so far was he from having a proper sense of this lenity, or acquiescing in the sentence of his sovereign, that he loudly asserted his being wronged, and demanded a trial, to vindicate his character, with all the assurance of conscious innocence.

This was the highest insult that could be offered to

a prince, as it impeached his justice, and questioned his power in the tenderest point. However, he scorned to take any advantage of it, but, waiving every personal resentment, condescended to grant the trial demanded; but with this express declaration, that, as it was at the instance of the party, and without any legal necessity, he should abide by the sentence of his judges, be it what it would, as he would never interfere further. But this declaration was of little weight, for the general was well advised, before he solicited the trial, that, according to the laws of the country, he was exempted from the danger of it, by his being deprived of all his military employments, as they only made a Briton subject to military law, by which he must be tried; and this exemption was the real reason of his being so eager for a trial. But, though his life might be out of danger by this subterfuge, the trial completed the ruin of his character beyond all possibility of recovery, as, upon the most impartial examination, his neglect of the orders of his commander, and the pernicious consequences of it, by the loss of so favourable an opportunity of entirely ruining the army of the enemy, and, perhaps, putting an end to the war, by that means appeared so plainly, that the justice of his being dismissed the service was not only asserted, but he was also declared incapable of ever being admitted into it again: and thus he fell, a second time, a victim to his own schemes. As to the victory which had been the immediate cause of his ruin, as soon as the circumstances of it, as related here, came to be known to the world, the general lost the glory which, in the first emotions of joy and admiration, had been so lavishly heaped upon him for it; and it was justly ascribed to accident; as human foresight could not possibly have formed any plan for such an improbable instance of bravery as that which obtained it.

CHAPTER XXXI.

Chrysal arrives at Brussels. The great source of Jesuitical influence. Anecdotes of a man of pleasure and a lady of fashion. Their history concluded in character.

AS soon as the confusion of such an event was a little over, and my master thought he could travel in safety, he quitted the camp of the conquerors, and throwing off the character of a Jew, which, as I said, he had borne there, pursued his journey to Brussels in his own, where he was to receive further instructions; for, though the great design was carried on by every member of the society, yet the real secret of it was known only to a few of the heads, whose orders the rest obeyed with an implicit exactness, fidelity, and zeal, never equalled by the subjects of any sovereign upon earth, since the days of *the old man of the mountain*.

It was some time before these instructions arrived; which gave me an opportunity of learning the intrigues of that debauched, gaudy, insignificant court, by my master's intimacy with the confessor of the governor, who, besides the advantage of that character to gain information, was himself a man of pleasure in the most extensive sense of the phrase and utterly free from every restraint of principle that could oppose its gratification; though he had th

address to maintain the dignity of his station, by his secrecy and regard to propriety of appearance.

There is nothing that contributes so much to the influence which the Jesuits possess over the minds of the people, as their knowledge of the secret history of their lives. To acquire this, they stop at nothing; they assume all characters, mix in all companies, and enter into every scene of vicious pleasure, where reserve is thrown off, and the whole heart appears without disguise. Such an opportunity of information, therefore, was not to be missed. Accordingly, the evening after my master's arrival, he went with his friend to court, where they had a liberty of placing themselves in a convenient situation, to see all the company, and make their remarks without danger of being overheard; such as were merely political I shall omit, as I am sick of such a stupid subject, and only take notice of those which may extend your knowledge of the human heart.—‘Observe that little mean-looking ill-favoured person,’ said the confessor, continuing a conversation, the beginning of which I need not repeat, ‘who acts as master of the ceremonies. You see his feeble frame is quite worn out with debauchery, and he nods over the grave in anticipated old age; yet still he affects an air of levity and youth, and strives to inflame others, by his discourse, to vices which he is no longer able to participate of himself; but this is all grimace; and he assumes this appearance of gaiety, to hide the gloomy discontent and remorse that prey upon his heart.

‘There is something so particular in the story of this man, that it may be worth while to give you a short sketch of it. He is a native of a neighbouring country, where his father, from the lowest state of

‘ poverty, amassed such wealth in trade, that his
‘ vanity prompted him to get his family ennobled, to
‘ hide the meanness of his original. There is some-
‘ thing so absurdly wrong in purchased nobility, that
‘ it always turns the heads of the purchasers, perhaps
‘ in just retribution for so flagrant an abuse of an
‘ institution meant as a reward for merit. The
‘ *ennobled* man lived not to shew the truth of this
‘ observation ; but his sons abundantly made up for
‘ that, the elder lavishing his wealth on every kind of
‘ expensive vanity, and the younger the person you
‘ see, glorying in every kind of debauchery, as if vice
‘ and folly were the prerogatives of their honour.

‘ In the course of a life of pleasure, he contracted
‘ an acquaintance with that lady, whom you see at
‘ the upper end of the room. Though nature had
‘ never meant him for a man of intrigue, and debauchery had exhausted even the little powers she
‘ gave, he thought it would have been inconsistent
‘ with his character of a man of pleasure, not to
‘ commence an affair of gallantry with so deplorable
‘ a person. Accordingly, as she happened to be
‘ married, he directly cultivated an intimacy with her
‘ husband, into whose unguarded confidence he so
‘ far insinuated himself, as to receive many acts of
‘ friendship from him. To a man who had any sense
‘ of honour or honesty, this would have been an irresistible reason for desisting from his base design ;
‘ but he was above such *vulgar* restraints, and gently took the opportunity of the husband’s friendship to debauch the virtue of the wife.

‘ Nothing but the most abandoned profligacy in
‘ the woman could have given success to such an
‘ attempt, as the husband exceeded the paramour in
‘ every natural endowment of mind and person

beyond every degree of comparison ; but the caprice
of vicious inclination is not to be accounted for ;
it will loath the most exquisite delicacies, and sate
itself on garbage.

‘ They had not continued their commerce long,
when their indiscretion betrayed them. It is im-
possible to describe the astonishment and rage of
the injured husband, at the discovery ! Had it been
possible, he would have doubted his senses, which
were witnesses to his disgrace. In the first emo-
tions of his rage, he was going to break in upon
them, and take the revenge which his superior
strength amply put in his power ; but a moment’s
reflection shewed him the folly of such an action,
and determined him to take the safer and more
severe revenge of the law.

‘ Accordingly he withdrew, without being per-
ceived by them, and bringing some of his servants
to testify their crimes, as soon as he had secured the
proof necessary to obtain his satisfaction, entered
the room, in the height of their dalliance, and coolly
telling them that it would be proper for them to
choose another scene for their pleasure beside his
house, retired, and left them to their meditations,

‘ This conduct convinced them of his design, and
that they had not a moment to lose, to avoid some of
the most disagreeable consequences of it ; as soon,
therefore, as they recovered from the first impres-
sions of their astonishment, they directly departed
together, and concealing the place of their retire-
ment, for fear of a pursuit, quitted the territories of
the state as soon as they possibly could.

‘ But they might have spared themselves that

‘trouble; the revenge which the husband sought was
‘of another nature: he directly instituted a suit at
‘law against them, by which, as he had sufficient
‘proof of their guilt, he obtained a divorce from his
‘wife, and such damages against the violater of his
‘bed, as made it impossible for him ever to return to
‘his country, without he designed to languish out the
‘rest of his days in a prison.

‘The lovers, in the mean time, were very far from
‘being happy in the uninterrupted enjoyment of each
‘other. Variety and the mystery of intrigue were all
‘that tempted them to the correspondence at first;
‘and now that these were lost, reflection opened their
‘eyes to the consequences of their folly, and made
‘them look on each other as the authors of their mutual
‘ruin. Such thoughts soon cool the most ardent
‘love; what effect then must they have upon persons
‘in their situation? however necessity obliged them
‘to conceal their sentiments; and, as soon as the
‘divorce gave them liberty, they married, to preserve
‘the appearance of a passion they never felt,
‘and obtain a support from their families, which they
‘could not have expected on any other terms.

‘When this was done, and that necessity removed,
‘the aversion which they had long entertained broke
‘out in the most violent manner. They lived in a
‘state of perpetual warfare, in which the wife threw
‘off all regard to decency, even so far as to take
‘advantage of her superior strength, and frequently
‘beat her feeble husband. Observe that scar on his
‘upper lip! the third day of their happy marriage
‘he received that mark of her rage from the heel of
‘her slipper, with which she also beat out two of his
‘teeth, whose place he now supplies with artificial
‘ones.

' But the viciousness of her inclination, which first brought him into this wretched situation, released him from it sooner than he deserved. They had fixed their residence here, where the prince soon happened to take a liking to her, the first overture of which she eagerly embraced; and completed the infamy of her character, by quitting her second husband to become his mistress; in which station you behold her at present.

' Though such a disgrace seemed to be a judicial retaliation upon the husband, for his own base crime, he was insensible of it; and instead of taking advantage of his deliverance, and retiring to some place where his shame was not known, meanly accepted of the employment in which you see him, and submitted to be the slave of her vice and insolence.

' But though his hatred for her, and passion for the pomp and dissipation of a court, make him brave the infamy of such a situation, sickness, the constant consequence of debauchery, the faithful monitor of guilt, has awoken his conscience to a sense of the crime that has sunk him so low, and raised a remorse that wastes his life, though he thus absurdly strives to drown its voice in the noise and vanity of vice.

CHAPTER XXXII.

The confessor entertains Chrysal's master with another not uncommon character. The modern method of repairing a broken fortune. The general consequence of female ambition. A curious amour commenced in an odd manner, and carried on in as odd a place.

MY master was beginning to make some obvious reflections on this account, but his friend soon diverted his attention to another object. 'Observe,' said he, pointing to a person who bore all the external marks of nobility in his habit and appearance, 'a striking proof of the insignificance of being born to wealth and honours! Who that sees the despicable figure which this man makes here, a voluntary exile from his own country, where his rank and fortune placed him in the most exalted, and advantageous light, can ever throw away a moment's thought on heaping up riches, or obtaining honours to perpetuate his name, and aggrandise his family, the folly and profusion of a single member of which may thus disappoint his hopes, and make his very virtues an aggravation of his own degeneracy and reproach?

'In a rank scarce inferior to that of a sovereign, and possessed of a fortune sufficient to support it with dignity to himself, and benefit to the community, did this man enter into life; but a few years

of the dissipation of what is falsely called a life of pleasure, distressed his fortune, and debased his principles, to such a degree, that he was obliged, and not ashamed, to have recourse to the method of a mercenary marriage, to retrieve his affairs, and enable him to support the external appearance of his character. The constant consequences of these marriages might be sufficient to open the eyes of the unhappy victims of them to such a dangerous folly; but vanity possesses so absolute an empire over the female heart, that nothing can prevent the gratification of it.

The female whom this person pitched upon, as proper for his purpose, on account of her immense wealth, was destitute of every charm of mind and person, to attract or preserve love or esteem. But few are sensible of their own deficiencies, or can bear to be informed of them. On his making the first overture to her, all her real friends took the alarm; they drew his character in proper colours; they shewed her, that necessity, not inclination, was the motive of his addresses, and they laid the inevitable consequences of a connection with such a person before her in the strongest light: but all was in vain! Her heart was fixed upon rank and precedence, and, so she could obtain them, she left the rest to chance. Accordingly, as she was absolutely her own mistress, the match was soon made, to the present satisfaction of both parties. He got her fortune, to pay his debts, and pursue his pleasures; and she rode in a coach, with coronets, and was called *her grace*.

But this mutual happiness did not last long; the moment he got possession of her fortune, all his wishes were fulfilled, and, as he had nothing further

‘ to expect, he did not think it necessary for him to
‘ continue any appearances of love, or even com-
‘ plaisance, for an object really disagreeable to him.

Accordingly, the very morning after his marriage,
‘ he set out, upon a party of pleasure, with some of
‘ his former companions ; and left the bride by her-
‘ self, to receive the compliments, and go through the
‘ farce usual on such occasions. Though such beha-
‘ viour must appear base and ungenerous to the last
‘ degree, yet she had no right to complain of it, as
‘ she could not expect any other from his known
‘ character, and motives for marriage ; she, there-
‘ fore, put the best face on the matter, and whether
‘ from intoxication at her elevation, or indifference to
‘ him, seemed to be insensible of the slight, and
‘ went through the ceremony and parade with all the
‘ appearance of pleasure and content, leaving him to
‘ pursue his own inclination, without molestation or
‘ complaint.

‘ But this calm did not hold long. As soon as
‘ new dignity lost the charms of novelty, nature
‘ awoke, as from a dream, and convinced her, that
‘ something more than empty shew was necessary to
‘ human happiness : but, alas ! this conviction came
‘ too late ; and all her expostulations were as in-
‘ effectual to induce the tenderness or esteem of her
‘ husband, as those of her friends had been with her,
‘ to prevent her marrying him. On the contrary, they
‘ turned his indifference into aversion, and made him
‘ treat her with indignity and contempt, insulting her
‘ deformity, and ridiculing the vanity that had prompted
‘ her to sacrifice her fortune for a bare title. Hard as
‘ such treatment was to be submitted to, she had no
‘ redress, but was obliged to bear it in silence, without
‘ even the poor consolation of compassion to mitigate
‘ her sufferings. At length a further aggravation of

her wrongs gave her the pleasure of revenge, by driving him again into the distresses from which her folly had relieved him.

‘ In the pursuit of pleasure, to which he had sacrificed his character and fortune, he never had even the excuse of a refined taste, or particular passion, to palliate his folly, but blindly followed the example of his companions, or was a slave to every gross impulse of his own caprice, without the least notion of delicacy, or even decency to direct him. As he was strolling alone about his house, one unhappy evening, when he had no company to divert his thoughts, he happened, just as it grew dark, to overhear two persons, a male and a female, in earnest conversation. Curiosity prompting him to listen, he soon discovered that love was the subject of their discourse, in which the man, whom, by his voice, he knew to be one of his huntsman’s helpers, was so successful, that he persuaded the fair-one to promise him a meeting, half an hour after, in the dog-kennel.

‘ Though the place of assignation might have deterred any person, whose senses, as well as his inclinations, were not totally debauched, from attempting to supplant the happy lover, the novelty of such an adventure made his lordship overlook that, and resolved to supply his dog-boy’s place. Accordingly, he retired unperceived, and going to the stables, ordered him to be called, and sent him directly on a message some miles off, without giving him an opportunity of letting his mistress know any thing of the matter. As soon as the time appointed drew near, his lordship went to the agreeable scene where the punctual fair one did not let him wait long. As he was about the dog-boy’s size, and

the place was quite dark, she never perceived the change put upon her, but lavished her caresses upon him with the greatest tenderness, vowing never more to have any correspondence with the pantry-boy or scullion, who, it seems, were the dog-boy's formidable rivals, but to be always constant to him alone; and took her leave of him, with a promise to meet him there at the same time, next evening.

Disgusting as every circumstance of this affair should have been, the oddity of it, with the pleasure of supplanting another, even so mean a person, and in so unworthy an object, made him determine to be punctual to her appointment. But then the difficulty was, how to prevent his rival's traversing his design, for his delicacy was not in the least alarmed at the thoughts of his participating in her favours. He was also at a loss to know who the obliging female might be, for the darkness that concealed him was equally favourable to her, and he was a stranger to her voice; nor did he care to ask any questions, as that would betray his own imposture, and bring on an explanation that he did not desire, both as his greatest pleasure was in the cheat, and the discovery might be attended with circumstances he should choose to avoid, in case the female was disagreeable to him.

To obviate all these inconveniences, he ordered his rival to attend him the moment he returned, when he gave him a letter to carry that instant, to a gentleman who lived about twenty miles off, with directions to be back early the next day with an answer. This he said aloud, in hearing of all his servants, that, if his mistress should happen to hear of her lover's being sent from home, she might also have reason to expect his return time enough to keep the

‘ appointment ; but, to prevent this, he had desired
‘ the person to whom he wrote, to keep the messenger,
‘ as if for an answer for the letter, two or three days ;
‘ in which time he concluded he himself should be
‘ tired of his amour.

CHAPTER XXXIII.

*Continued : his lordship's scheme to fling his rival
unluckily disappointed. A disagreeable meeting oc-
casions strange discoveries. Women never at a loss.
Law often spoils sport.*

‘ PLEASED with the sagacity of this scheme, he
‘ waited for the next evening, with an impatience that
‘ he did not often feel on such occasions ; but an un-
‘ lucky accident disappointed his designs. The gen-
‘ tleman to whom he wrote the letter happened not
‘ to be at home, nor was expected for a day or two ,
‘ wherefore, as his lord had ordered him to make
‘ haste back, he left the letter, and returned without
‘ any delay, perhaps not more in obedience to his
‘ orders, than from his impatience to retrieve the dis-
‘ appointment his desires had met, by his absence,
‘ the evening before. As soon as he alighted, there-
‘ fore, his first care was to find out his mistress, to
‘ tell her the reason of his disappointing her the even-
‘ ing before, and to make a new assignation for that ;
‘ but what was their mutual surprise when they came
‘ to compare notes ! As he insisted on his not having

‘ attended the appointment, she flew into a rage, and accused him of having betrayed her basely to some of his companions; and, as she positively asserted her having met some person there, he accused her, with equal warmth, of inconstancy, and sacrificing him to some of his rivals, on whom he vowed the severest vengeance, if he could ever find him out.

‘ As this altercation was not carried on with much delicacy on either side, it soon produced an absolute rupture between the lovers, who separated with sentiments for each other very different from those with which they met. The dog-boy, in an hour or two, when his resentment cooled a little, recollected that it might be proper to let his lord know the success of his message, who sent for him into his presence directly; and being freed from his apprehensions, by hearing that he was but that moment returned, ordered him to set out again instantly, and deliver the letter to the gentleman, wherever he was, and not return without an answer.

‘ His orders were so urgent that the fellow did not dare to make the least delay; but fortune, that seemed resolved to cross his lordship’s designs, contrived it so, that he met the gentleman on his road, without having called at home, or received the letter that had been left for him. Upon the dog-boys informing him of it, he concluded, as he was much nearer to his lordship’s than to his own house, that it was the readiest way for him to wait upon him directly, without minding to send the man for the letter. Accordingly, he bade him turn back, and ride on before him, to acquaint his lordship of his coming.

‘ Though it was late when he had set out the second time, he made such haste, that he reached home just at the time of his lordship’s appointment ; when it unluckily coming into his head that his perfidious mistress might possibly have taken the advantage of his absence, to make another assignation in his dog-kennel, the first thing he did, the moment he dismounted from his horse, was to go there to see if any one had invaded his territories. Nor was his suspicion disappointed ; for the fair-one was so uneasy to unravel the mystery of the adventure of the evening before, that she punctually attended her appointment, where she had not waited many minutes before her unknown lover arrived. The scene of their meeting was so dark, that it was impossible for either of them to know the other. However, she soon thought of a method to remedy this, which was to purloin something out of his pockets, by which she might discover who he was, without betraying herself ; for she soon found that he knew no more of her than she did of him.

‘ She had just executed her design, and was taking her leave of her lover, when his jealous rival came upon them unawares, and over-hearing their expressions of fondness, was so enraged, that he resolved to take immediate revenge : accordingly he approached them without any noise, and turning the but-end of his whip, aimed a stroke so unluckily, though at a venture, that it felled his lordship to the ground. The female, who instantly guessed what was the matter, took advantage of the darkness to make her escape, which she happily effected without any disaster, the dog-boy stumbling over his fallen adversary, the first step he advanced to pursue her. His lordship, half recovered from the blow, laid hold of his antagonist, who grappling with

‘ him directly, a battle ensued, in which nobility was
‘ so rudely handled, that his lordship was obliged to
‘ declare himself, and cry out for quarter. It is easy
‘ to conceive the confusion of the conqueror upon this
‘ discovery ; he instantly strove to disengage himself,
‘ and make his escape ; but his lordship held him
‘ fast, promising to forgive him, though, if he would
‘ have the discretion never to mention a syllable of
‘ the affair, and inform him who the female was with
‘ whom he had made the assignation to meet in this
‘ place the evening before.

‘ These conditions were too easy not to be immediately complied with. He accordingly swore
‘ eternal secrecy, and readily told his lordship that
‘ the girl was no other than the kitchen maid’s daughter, who served as a scullion-wench under her mother. This discovery of his mistress’s quality was
‘ almost as disagreeable to his lordship, as the dog-boy’s jealousy. However, he smothered his vexation, and stealing secretly into the house, that he
‘ might not be seen in such a condition, retired to his
‘ own apartment by himself, to change his clothes,
‘ and wash off the blood and dirt with which he was
‘ all over plentifully daubed.

‘ As soon as he had set himself somewhat to rights, he rang for his valet de chambre, who was his usual
‘ agent upon such occasions, and ordered him to
‘ bring the kitchen-maid’s daughter up to him. The
‘ valet, who was sufficiently acquainted with the capriciousness of his master’s taste, was not in the
‘ least surprised at his choice of such an object, but
‘ obeyed him directly. The fortunate female, who
‘ had found out the quality of her new lover by his
‘ snuff-box, which she had picked out of his pocket,
‘ was almost afraid to obey the glad summons, for fear

she might be suspected of having designedly occasioned the outrage his lordship had lately met; however, her ambition getting the better of her fear, she suffered herself to be prevailed on; and went trembling and blushing, in all the bashfulness of virgin innocence, to know his lordship's commands.

‘If he had been surprised at the discovery of her condition, he was much more agreeably so at the sight of her; for, though she was far from being handsome, there was something in her face, which, with her extreme youth; and a glow of health that her confusion heightened not a little, struck his fancy in an uncommon manner. He, therefore, without giving her the least hint of what had happened, as he imagined she knew nothing of him, made no ceremony of proposing love to her. But, young as she was, she had too much woman in her soul to comply so easily, though there was nothing she desired more ardently. Accordingly, she refused his lordship with the most respectful modesty; and, on urging his request further, threw herself at his feet, in a flood of tears, and begged him to have compassion upon her friendless youth and innocence. Such behaviour would have made him doubt the dog-boy’s information, did not the sound of her voice convince him she was the person. He therefore laughed at her artifice, and told her, that, as soon as the farce was ended, he should expect another answer, as he knew she had granted to others the favour he asked of her. This convinced her that he had discovered her, and that it was necessary for her to enlarge her scheme, to accomplish the design she had formed, of establishing a lasting interest in his affections. Accordingly, upon his saying this, she embraced his knees in a seeming agony of distress, and, conjuring him to have mercy

‘ on her folly, owned she had transgressed with one,
‘ and one only, who had made such an impression
‘ upon her heart, that though she had taken him for
‘ another, and knew not even who he was, she had
‘ made a vow never to repeat her folly with any
‘ other.

‘ The candour of this confession, the greatest part
‘ of which he thought he knew to be true, completed
‘ her conquest over him. He raised her from the
‘ ground, and, embracing her tenderly, discovered
‘ himself to her. The consequence is obvious. She
‘ immediately appeared in public as his mistress, and
‘ had the address to accommodate herself so entirely
‘ to his caprices, that she soon gained the absolute
‘ mastery of his heart. As for the poor dog-boy, he
‘ was turned off, of course, as an offence to her sight,
‘ though not without a considerable gratuity to pur-
‘ chase his silence; but that was impossible; the
‘ moment he left the house, he looked upon himself
‘ as freed from the necessity of concealing it any
‘ longer, and made it the common subject of his dis-
‘ course, till it became as publicly known as his
‘ lordship’s name.

‘ This happened just as his affairs became again so
‘ distressed, that he was forced to withhold the sup-
‘ port he had allowed his wife. She, therefore, di-
‘ rectly took advantage of it, to sue him for a sepa-
‘ rate maintenance, on the plea of his thus living in
‘ avowed adultery. The fact was too flagrant to be
‘ denied; and his infatuation was such, that he would
‘ not remove the cause, to avoid the consequence of
‘ the suit, but chose to quit his native country, and
‘ come here with his mistress to live in the disesteem
‘ and contempt you see him treated with, on the poor
‘ pittance of his fortune, which the law allows him for

‘his support; the rest, much the greater part of it, being assigned for the maintenance of his wife, and payment of his debts.’

CHAPTER XXXIV.

Chrysal's master meets an old acquaintance, who relates the history of his life. Curious anecdotes of a great man.

MY master's friend proceeded to give him an account of several other persons who were present; but as his remarks were confined to their political characters, I shall omit them, as I said before. On these I have dwelt so long, because they display a just, however disagreeable, picture of human nature.

The day after my master's being with his friend at court, he went to see an old acquaintance of his. The principles of the soul are sometimes so strong, as to baffle hypocrisy, and mark the character of a man, in the lineaments of his visage, to every common eye. The first view of my master's old friend and acquaintance struck me with horror; every vice that can deform the human soul appeared triumphant, and unallayed with any the least tincture of virtue in his face. Though I was no stranger to the latitude of my master's principles, the intimacy of such a person blackened my worst opinion of him. They flew to each other's arms, and, embracing with the tenderness of long-parted friends, asked each other a thou-

said questions, almost in a breath, concerning their mutual welfare, and the adventures they had met with, since they had seen each other last. In the account given by my master there was none but common occurrences; but the history of his friend had something so strikingly singular in it, that for the curiosity of such a character, I will give you a short sketch of it, as drawn by himself, with this difference only, that I shall omit several facts too gross for repetition, and soften the colouring of the whole, as the glaringness of it would overpower human sight, and strike imagination with horror too strong to bear.

‘ You have often expressed a curiosity, my friend,’ said the stranger to my master, ‘ to learn the particulars of my life. That I did not gratify it, was not owing to any diffidence or disinclination to oblige you; but because I had not arrived at any fixed period, to make a proper pause at, and therefore an imperfect account could give but little satisfaction. But that objection is now removed: I am here settled in a situation, which, though far below my former hopes, I shall strive to be contented in, and not launch out any more into the fatigues and perils of the world, at this late season of my life. One caution only I must hint to you, which is, that in the account I am going to give, I shall throw aside all prejudice, and represent every thing in the unadorned simplicity of its first principles, without any regard to the received notions of self-deluded man.

‘ I was born in France, of poor parents, who were scarcely able to give me the first rudiments of a liberal education. To avoid a life of labour, I rashly entered into the monastic, before I had expe-

rience enough to see the folly of such a step; but my stay here was not long: to a man of sense the obligation of a vow ceases, with the motive that induced him to take it. I made my escape from the convent, and as I was destitute of money to support me, and as yet too ignorant of the ways of the world to be able to live without it, was driven by necessity to enlist myself for a soldier. But I soon found that I had not gained by the change, the slavery of a soldier's life being still more intolerable than that of a monk. I therefore had recourse to my former expedient for relief, and deserted the very first opportunity. I then threw myself at random upon the world, without any particular point to direct my course to; but this did not discourage me: I had boldly thrown off the shackles which foolish man had forged for himself, to prevent his rising in life, and regulated my conduct solely by my convenience. This gave me a superiority over the rest of mankind, which I never failed to avail myself of. I looked upon their follies as my inheritance, and soon found abundant opportunities of turning them to my advantage. For some years I lived a life of ramble, in the course of which I met with many adventures. At length, I thought my own country too narrow a sphere to confine my activity to, and so I went to Spain, where I expected an ample harvest from the ignorance and superstition of the people; but their poverty disappointed my hopes, and almost starved me into repentance of my expedition. However, I proceeded to Madrid, where the credulity of a countryman of my own made me amends for the reserve of the natives. He not only relieved my immediate wants, which were too pressing to be borne, but also entrusted into my hands some valuable materials for a literary work

‘ from which he expected both reputation and profit.
‘ But I disappointed his hopes ; for, being tired of
‘ Spain, I took the first opportunity of going to try
‘ my fortune in some other country, and carried all
‘ his papers with me. Nor was this all he suffered
‘ by his confidence. I had before experienced the
‘ inconveniency of depending upon charity, in a
‘ country where there is scarce sufficient for the ne-
‘ cessities of nature. I therefore thought it proper to
‘ take all the money and valuable effects in his pos-
‘ session, to defray the expenses of my journey. As
‘ to the distress this might throw him into, I never
‘ regarded that a moment, no more than I did his being
‘ my countryman. I despised the narrowness of
‘ thought that made such accidental circumstances of
‘ any weight, when they clashed with my own par-
‘ ticular designs ; and I esteemed the lesson I had
‘ taught him, to be more cautious whom he placed
‘ his confidence in, a sufficient recompense for his
‘ loss. From Spain, I directed my course to Ger-
‘ many, where the political knowledge I acquired
‘ from my late friend’s papers, made me so much
‘ taken notice of, that after some time, not disagree-
‘ ably spent among the great, I was recommended to
‘ the prime minister and favourite of the king of
‘ Poland, as a proper person to be entrusted with the
‘ education of his only son. Not to disgrace this
‘ character, I assumed a fictitious name and title, and
‘ gave out, that I had been obliged to leave my own
‘ country for an affair of honour. My employment
‘ gave me frequent opportunities of conversing with
‘ the father of my pupil, in which I displayed my
‘ skill in politics to such advantage, that I soon was
‘ admitted into his esteem and confidence. In this
‘ intercourse I had the honour of starting the first
‘ hint of that project, which afterwards kindled a

'late war in Germany, and will immortalize his name
'(for he has had the ungenerous meanness to assume
'it to himself) to all ages.

'Such a situation was sufficient to satisfy the
'desires of any other man; but my ambition knew
'no bounds: I thought my patron did not reward
'my merit as it deserved; and, in revenge, I re-
'solved to work his ruin. For this purpose, I en-
'tered into a correspondence with several noblemen,
'who were his enemies, and, taking advantage of the
'opportunities his confidence gave me of seeing his
'papers, copied some, and counterfeited others, that
'I thought necessary to my design, which was no
'less than to raise a civil war, in which the minister
'should be sacrificed, and the master dethroned.
'But, just as my plot was ripe for execution, it was
'discovered, and I hurried from a palace to a prison,
'where I was condemned to languish out the rest of
'my days; my life being spared in compliance with
'a delicacy of my patron, who thought it would be a
'disgrace to him to have his son's tutor hanged.
'When I had lain here some time, a happy thought
'procured me my liberty: I wrote a most peniten-
'tial letter to the pope's nuncio, in which I disco-
'vered my true name, and my having fled from my
'vows; and pretending a thorough sense of my
'guilt, and desire of returning to my order, begged
'his intercession in my favour. My scheme suc-
'ceeded! He claimed me as an ecclesiastic, and the
'king, whose mind was too intent on greater matters
'to think of me, readily complied. I was accord-
'ingly released from my prison, but instead of being
'set absolutely at liberty, as I had hoped, was sent
'under a guard of ecclesiastics to Rome, where all
'the favour I could obtain, was to be ordered back
to my convent. This was a great disappointment

‘ to me; but I was obliged to submit. I accordingly set out, guarded as before, but determined to take the first opportunity of making my escape; which I at length effected, after many vain attempts.

‘ To frustrate the pursuits of my guards, I fled into Switzerland, where the name of liberty flattered my hopes of doing whatever I pleased. The first thing I did there, was to abjure my religion, and profess their’s, to conciliate their good opinion. This was no difficulty upon me, as I had long looked upon all religions with equal indifference. As I had no money, I immediately commenced author. But, though I gained reputation, my profits were so inconsiderable, that I was obliged to have recourse to other methods for my support, some of which happening to contradict their prejudices, I was obliged to leave their dominions with circumstances of disgrace. You will laugh at the narrow notions of mankind, when I tell you, that the affair they made so great a noise about, was only my denying a debt which I was unable to pay, and the creditor did not even want.

‘ There were some other particulars, indeed, of my conduct, which would have met with a severe fate, had I not taken prudent care to obviate it. I had entered into an intimacy with a person of some fortune, who had an agreeable wife. The connections of the wise are always made with a view to some particular end. I had more than one in this acquaintance: the supply of my necessities, by the generosity of the husband, and the gratification of my pleasure, by the enjoyment of the wife. I succeeded in both, but was prevented by an accident from enjoying my success long. The husband surprised us one day in a situation that did not admit

of doubt. He drew his sword, to have revenged his wrongs with my death; but I disappointed his design, by presenting a pistol at his head, which I always carried about me, for fear of accidents. Upon this, he ran out of the house in a kind of frenzy. I saw the delicacy of my situation, and that my safety depended upon the proper use of that moment. The wife had swooned away at the first sight of her husband. I ran and fetched a glass of water, as if to recover her, but conveyed a few drops into it, which I never went without, for any such emergency, that delivered her for ever from all fear of her husband's resentment. It was in her power to make discoveries to her husband, which I did not choose; beside, as the suspicion of her death would inevitably fall upon him, I thought that a good way to escape his revenge. I then quitted the house without being perceived. All things happened as I could wish. The husband was obliged to fly from his country, to avoid an ignominious death, for the murder of his wife; and all his effects were confiscated to the state. It is true, I did not entirely escape suspicion! He had laid open all he knew of the affair, by letter, to his friends! but, though they believed him, he had no evidence to support his charge; so that I despised his impotent accusations.

From Switzerland I once more turned my face to Germany, where my name was so famous for my political knowledge, that, a war being just ready to break out, I received considerable offers from most of the parties concerned, to engage me in their service; but, though I refused none, I resolved not to engage myself absolutely to any, till I could know which might prove most advantageous to me.'

CHAPTER XXXV.

Continued. He comes to England, where his services are rejected by the state, and he is obliged to exert his abilities in a lower sphere. He gains the confidence of his landlord, from whom he borrows all he is worth, and then strives to pay the debt with a halter. A good retreat is better than a bad stand.

‘ AS England was likely to bear a considerable part in the war, I thought it proper to go over, and sound the inclinations of the ministry there also. The riches and credulity of the inhabitants of that country have long made it esteemed the inheritance of needy adventurers. The thought of displaying my abilities in so fertile a soil inspired me with an ardour I had never felt before. I already grasped all the wealth of the nation, and looked upon myself as the oracle of the people, and the terror of the ministry, who would not fail to purchase my silence with a pension, that should enable me to spend the rest of my days, wherever I liked, with dignity and ease.

‘ Full of these flattering hopes, I arrived in London, where I soon found, that, just as the notion I had formed of the people in general might be, the government would not take the bait I had prepared for them, and treated me and my proposals with equal contempt. This threw me into the necessity

' of prostituting the abilities which I fondly hoped
' would have been employed in embroiling nations,
' to the deception of individuals, for the support of
' life; for all the wealth I was master of consisted
' solely in the projects of my brain. My success
' in this under-plot made me some amends for the
' miscarriage of the other. I no sooner fixed my
' habitation, than I was crowded to by tradesmen of
' all kinds, to solicit my custom for things which I
' had not the least probability of being ever able to
' pay for. But that gave me no concern; I accepted
' their offers to such an amount, that I was immedi-
' ately able to procure considerable sums of money
' for other occasions, by the sale of commodities
' which, so far from having occasion for, I scarcely
' knew the use of.

' Flushed with this good fortune, I threw off all
' reserve, and gave a loose to every passion which
' luxury could raise in a temper naturally warm;
' never reflecting that the day would soon come when
' my inability to pay my present debts would not only
' put a stop to these artificial resources, but also prob-
' ably plunge me in the horrors of a gaol for life.
' I professed myself a man of pleasure! I dressed,
' gamed, and intrigued with people of the first rank:
' and, for some time, was so intoxicated as to forget
' my purpose in coming over, and think I could sup-
' port this life for ever. Not that I was ever so
' so intent upon my pleasures as to miss any oppor-
' tunity of procuring the means immediately necessary
' to obtain them. On the contrary, the moment I
' threw off my designs upon the government, I doubled
' my application to turn the follies of particulars to
' my own advantage, stopping at nothing, however
' iniquitous in the opinion of the world, to accomplish
' my designs. Such a life must necessarily involve

‘ me in a variety of adventures, many of which, it is
‘ true, I got not so smoothly over as I could wish;
‘ but I had learned philosophy enough to take the
‘ bad with the good, without repining at what it was
‘ not in my power to redress. It would be endless
‘ to enter into a particular detail of every thing I did
‘ and suffered in the course of this life; I shall, there-
‘ fore, only just mention one or two affairs, which
‘ may serve to give you some notion of the rest. As
‘ I particularly valued myself upon my literary cha-
‘ racter, there was no kind of acquaintance I was
‘ fonder of cultivating, than with men of letters; for
‘ which I had also a further motive, that, as their
‘ attention to books generally made them strangers
‘ to the ways of men, they were most easy to be made
‘ the property of any mercenary designs.

‘ On both these accounts I had taken lodgings in
‘ the house of a clergyman, who, besides the charac-
‘ ter of a man of learning, was also reputed to be in
‘ good circumstances. I soon found that he was a
‘ person exactly fitted for my designs, and therefore
‘ lost no time in making a proper impression on him
‘ The first step towards acquiring confidence is to
‘ place it yourself. I immediately made him my
‘ banker, lodging every sum of money I won at play,
‘ or raised by the means I mentioned before, in his
‘ hands. As my success made these sums very con-
‘ siderable at first, he conceived an opinion of my
‘ being a person of consequence and fortune above
‘ my appearance. This inspired him with such re-
‘ spect for me, that if at any time I even hinted an
‘ occasion for more than I had in his hands, he not
‘ only offered to supply me, but even looked upon
‘ my acceptance as an honour. To confirm him in
‘ this way of thinking, I frequently accepted of his
‘ offers when I had no occasion only that the ac-

'tuality of my payment might make him still the readier whenever I should. Nor was it long before I was obliged to avail myself of this scheme. A bad run at play stripped me of all my money, and my tradesmen brought in their bills, so that my former resources were at an end. In this difficulty I applied to my landlord, who readily supplied me with all the money in his possession; and, that not being sufficient, borrowed as much more as he could, till my remittances should arrive from my estate.

'This supply might have extricated me from the difficulties of the present moment. But I was awoke from my golden dreams, and saw that this was the last money I could any ways expect to raise, as my practices began to be suspected, and every body had taken the alarm against me; so that, if I parted with it, I should only gain a momentary relief, as my landlord would soon expect to be paid also. I, therefore, resolved to serve all my creditors alike, and go back to Germany with the money in my possession, leaving them to curse their credulity, and be more cautious for the future. As I had still a considerable quantity of valuable effects in my possession, I knew it would be impossible to remove them without giving the alarm to my landlord, and I could not think of leaving them in his hands, though they were far short of the debt I owed him. In this dilemma my ready genius prompted a scheme that would not only secure me from him, but also give me time to prepare for my decampment with more convenience. Upon my first coming to his house, I had contrived, by taking the impressions in wax, to get false keys to all his locks. This is a piece of precaution, which no man of prudence will ever neglect. In pursuance

‘ of my scheme, the morning after I received the money from him, and before I was to pay it away by appointment, I took the opportunity, while he was at church, to convey into his closet several things of value, my property in which I could clearly prove, taking away, at the same time, the obligations which I had given him for the money he had lent me, which his confidence in my honour had prevented his taking the precaution of having witnesses to. As soon as I had done this, I went directly to a magistrate, before whom I made oath of my being robbed of a large sum of money and many of my most valuable effects, among which I particularly named the things I had left in his closet, and required an authority to apprehend my landlord, and search his house, as I had reason to suspect that he had stolen them, having caught him often coming out of my apartments in evident confusion, and at times when my being absent deprived him of every honest reason of going into them; and this charge I had confirmed by the testimony of my valet de chambre, and another person, whom I had prepared properly.’

‘ Though the execution of sentence is not quite so sudden in England as in Turkey, an accusation of this kind, however groundless, is, in many respects, not much less dreadful; the harpies of the law never losing their hold of the accused, till they have devoured every thing in his possession. The warrant I demanded was readily granted for this reason; and away I resolutely went, in company with the officers, to execute it. We found my landlord, in the security of innocence, in his parlour, waiting for my coming in to dinner. It is impossible to express his astonishment, when they laid hold of him like a thief, and told him it was on my accus-

tion. All the resolution and presence of mind I was master of were requisite to bear me through the scene! At first he was unable to speak a word, which the candour of his accusers did not fail to construe into a silent acknowledgment of his guilt; but, recovering himself in a few moments, he first raised his eyes to heaven, and then turning them upon me, gave me a look that almost froze the blood in my veins; but never deigned to speak a word to me. He then addressed himself to the officers, and mildly desired that they would execute their duty with lenity, nor offer any indignity to the sacred character he bore, till a proof of his guilt should make him appear unworthy of the sanction of it. Such behaviour had an effect not to be described upon all that were present. The very officers forgot their hardened nature for a moment, and the tear of pity fell from eyes that never wept before at human misery. Even I began to feel the foolish infection, and was obliged to charm up other passions to prevent my betraying myself, though my ruin was at stake. Accordingly, I raised my voice, and, with a stern accent, commanded the officers to do their duty, and search the house, before his accomplices should have time to convey away the things we came in quest of. This word put an end to a compassion that was contrary to their nature, and they proceeded to their business with their usual keenness, though still with respect, till they came to search his closet, where the sight of things, which I had sworn to have been stolen from me, appeared so plain a proof of his guilt, that they treated him with all the indignity of the vilest malefactor.

Secure in his innocence, he had hitherto preserved a steadiness of temper that seemed superior to the

power, of fortune; but at this sight his resolution failed him. He fell upon his knees, and raising his hands and eyes to heaven, "Just God!" said he, "thy will be done! Thou knowest my innocence, and art able to defend me!—And wilt defend me," said he, rising, and recovering his former spirits. In the mean time, I seemed encouraged, by this success, to hope for the recovery of the money which I pretended to have lost also, and ceased not to urge the officers to make the strictest search. But this was not necessary; they ransacked every place, and tossed about every thing that was too large for them to convey away, till they made his whole house one scene of desolation. They then dragged him before the magistrate, where the finding of the things gave such weight to the charge which I positively swore against him, that he was on the verge of being hurried to prison, and would certainly have suffered an ignominious death, had it not been for some unlucky prevarication in my valet de chambre's evidence. This, with some suspicions that were suggested against my own character, by the pawnbroker, to whom I had sold the goods I took up from my tradesmen; and who unfortunately happened to be present, gave the affair such a turn in his favour, that he was admitted to bail, till his innocence, or guilt, should be proved by a public trial. But it was far from my intention to wait for this. The moment I left the magistrate, I went to the house of an acquaintance, whither I had ordered my effects to be removed before, where I resolved to prepare for my departure with the utmost expedition. As to my creditors, when they called upon me next morning, as I had appointed, for their money, I told him the story of my having been robbed the day before by my landlord, and therefore that they must wait till I should receive another

remittance from my own country ; and though I saw that few of them believed me, or were inclined to grant me that indulgence, I was under no concern, as the habitation of my friend was in a place privileged from the immediate power of the law. However, it was impossible to be easy in such a situation, where every eye that saw me reproached me with what I had done : I, therefore, took the opportunity of going off, in which I was so successful as to elude the vigilance of my pursuers, and escape to Holland, where I had the vexation to learn that half of my scheme was disappointed, my landlord being discharged without trial, for want of my appearing to prosecute him. But, though he escaped death, his affairs were so effectually ruined by the loss of the money he lent and had procured for me, and the expense and damage he suffered by my accusation, that he was obliged to fly for refuge to the savages of America, from the power of his more savage creditors.

CHAPTER XXXVI.

Continued. He launches again into the troubled ocean of politics, and suffers a second shipwreck in England. 'He that will not when he may,' &c. —It is often better to play a poor game than stand out. Chrysal arrives at Lisbon.

' I NO sooner arrived in Holland, the general rendezvous of politicians, that I reassumed that character once more, and that with such success, that the minister of a power in alliance with England conceived such an opinion of my abilities, as made him offer to recommend me to that court, for an employment of the highest consequence in one of the principal courts of Germany. Though I was sensible that my return to England must be attended with disagreeable, if not dangerous circumstances, from the general prejudices that were entertained there against me, I boldly resolved to accept of his offer. The former, which could consist only in impotent marks of dislike, I disregarded; and the latter I judged my recommendation would enable me to defeat. Accordingly I set out with the utmost privacy, and was safe in London before my leaving Holland was even suspected by those who would have lain in wait for me.

' The very morning after my arrival I waited upon the minister to whom I was recommended, with

my letters, who received me very politely, and, upon the credit of the character given to him of me, entered into a familiar conversation on several subjects of intricacy and importance, in which I supported the character he had received of me so well, that he dismissed me with an assurance of his protection and favour. I now thought myself secure of my hopes ; but the pleasure of this thought was of a very short continuance. The very next morning I received a message from the minister to attend him directly, which you may think I obeyed in the highest spirits. Instead of the affability with which I expected to be received, upon my advancing to him, he darted a look at me, that seemed designed to search my very soul. After viewing me steadily thus for some moments, " You are recommended to me," said he, " as a man of abilities, and such I have found you to be ; but you have imposed upon the person who recommended you, and concealed your real character from him, or he would never have entertained so favourable an opinion of such an abandoned wretch ! But I have unravelled the mystery of your iniquities, and am guarded against your wiles. Your crimes call loud for vengeance, and the stroke of fate hangs over your head. But, in hopes you may repent and amend your life, and in respect to the recommendation you brought, (of which I cannot give you a stronger testimony than this,) I will give you an opportunity to escape, for this time, the ruin that threatens you. Fly this country directly ! If you are found in this city an hour hence, or make the least delay in any part of the kingdom, (and all your steps are watched) you are to expect no favour or protection. And that you should not plead inability to obey this injunction, take this purse of gold, and let me never see your face more."

‘I need not tell you the effect this speech had upon me. I took the purse, and retired, without making any reply; nor did I close my eyes in sleep, till I had bade adieu to that inhospitable shore. On my return, I went to wait upon my former patron, but was denied admission, and ordered never to go there any more; the account of my disgrace in England having as I learned afterwards, been transmitted to him in the very ship that brought me over.

‘Though these miscarriages mortified my pride, they did not deject my spirits. The gold given me by the English minister enabled me to support myself in a state of independence for some time; during which I successively offered to accept every proposal that I had formerly rejected; but I had missed my opportunity, and was now rejected myself in my turn. At length, when I was almost reduced to despair, the employment I hold here was offered to me, which, though far beneath my former hopes, I thought it not prudent to refuse, especially as it opened me an opportunity of venting my rage with impunity upon all who had ever offended me. I am literally hired to wage open war with truth, honour, and justice, by inventing false news, to support the exhausted spirits of the people; by defaming the enemies of my employers, to give a colour to the iniquitous designs of the latter; and by varnishing over the most flagrant acts of oppression, cruelty, and deceit, with the specious colours of authority, justice, and religion. To a man who retained any of the prejudices of the world, and did not examine things in the simplicity of nature, such a task must be most disagreeable. But to me all things are indifferent, as I know all things are alike.’

Here my master's friend concluded his history; the enormity of which would prevent its obtaining credit, had it been related by any body but himself; though, as I told you before, I have omitted the blackest particulars, and softened the colours of the rest.

In a few days after this interview my master left Brussels, and proceeded on his journey to Lisbon; during the remainder of which, nothing occurred worth relating.

CHAPTER XXXVII.

Chrysal comes, at Lisbon, into the possession of a former acquaintance. His master makes the great attempt without success. Several of the nobility are sacrificed to other motives, on pretence of being guilty of this fact. Chrysal's master is at length taken up, and he changes his service.

IF I was formerly surprised at meeting a Peruvian acquaintance at Vienna, I was no less so, when I found that the person to whom he sent me in Lisbon, was the very captain, of whose miraculous conversion, after the rape and murder of his brother's wife, I gave you an account in the beginning of this relation, whom I found to be a man chosen for *the great attempt*; the proof which he had given of his capacity in that affair having raised their opinion of him so high, as to make them think him the only proper person for this.

I did not remain long in a state of speculation in the possession of this master; the orders, which were brought along with me, were all that was waited for, to accelerate the execution of the design. Accordingly, the blow was struck a few nights after; but in the confusion inseparable from such attempts, without effect.

The king was shot in his coach, as he returned one night from a love assignation, at some distance from his palace, by my master, who had way-laid him at a proper place, and fired a blunderbuss, loaded with small balls, at him, through the back of the coach. By an instantaneous stupefaction of fear, which is often taken for resolution and presence of mind, the king fell down in the coach, and spoke not a word; which made my master conclude the work done, and so prevented a repetition of the blow. But what was his confusion, the next morning, when he found that the king, though severely wounded, was likely to recover! The opportunity was lost, nor was it probable that another would offer, till it would be too late. However, he attended the event, so far safe, that no one could endanger his safety by betraying him, there being no person there, not even of the order, privy to the action: for secrets of this importance are always entrusted to as few as possible.

While he thus calmly looked on as an unconcerned spectator, it is impossible to describe the distraction that reigned all over the city, where every person suspected his neighbour, and was almost afraid to converse with his brother, for fear of being suspected of a participation in a crime, of which he knew not the person guilty.

At court, in the mean time, the most mysterious

silence was observed, and all conversation on the subject discouraged. This was thought to be the most probable way of coming to the knowledge of so dark an affair; as their spies could thereby mix with the people with less suspicion, and make their observations with the greater certainty, when they should be off their guard. Not that they were at a loss to think from whence the blow had come: but by whom it was struck was the difficulty to find out, that so they might found their proceedings on an evidence of justice, for the Jesuits were too mighty a body to be attacked upon an uncertainty

The reason for suspecting them of this fact was, that upon the miscarriage of their premature attempt in America, the king was so incensed against the whole society, that he dismissed them from the direction of his conscience, and every other place and employment about his person and court. Such an indignity he was sensible must alarm the resentment of a set of men not remarkable for patience, or forgiving affronts; he had, therefore, taken every precaution to guard against them, as far as human prudence could direct his fears, which was only against disturbances in the state, for of such an attempt as this he could not suspect them. While things hung in this suspense, I had an opportunity of seeing into the character of the people I was among; but human language wants force to describe them. I have already given you the genuine character of the Dutch; to that let us add poverty, pride, superstition, bigotry, and its inseparable attendant, cruelty, and they will give you some idea of the present Portuguese. A people of whom it is hard to say, whether to abstracted speculation they are more ridiculous or execrable, the struggle between their follies and vices is so unremitted and so strong.

A little before I arrived there, the city had been reduced to ashes by lightning; and, before they had recovered from the consternation which such a misfortune threw them into, they received an account of the capital of their American dominions being swallowed by an earthquake. Such signal instances of the wrath of heaven might have been expected to alarm their consciences to look for the causes of it in their vices, and to try to avert it by repentance and amendment. But, instead of that, the first proof they gave of coming to their reason (or, I should rather say, of coming to themselves, for reason it was not) after their fright, was, to attribute these misfortunes to a relaxation in superstitious severity, and to demand, as victims to it, the only people, under heaven, whose good nature had given effectual relief to their distress. At length, after a calm so long, that people began to think the storm was quite allayed, it broke out with a fury, that amazed not only the unhappy heads on which it burst, but also the whole nation beside. I told you, that the attempt had been made upon the king, as he was returning from a love-meeting. The person with whom he had been was descended from the first, and related or allied to all the greatest families in his kingdom.

In a country whose characteristics are pride and revenge, such an intercourse must be dangerous even to royalty, as the honour of all those families seemed to be wounded through her. Accordingly, a rumour of her being with child having extorted some inadvertent, illative, general menaces from some of her relations, as the fact was really so, the conscious apprehensions of the king were alarmed; and, as he could not declare the true reason of them, he made a pretence of the assassination; the charge of which received some appearance of probability,

from the very circumstance which now occasioned its being brought against them, it being known that he was returning from that lady, at the very time when the attempt was made upon him.

Thus, to the fear of danger arising from a real crime, were the greatest subjects in the kingdom to be sacrificed, on a pretence of guilt, which their very accusers believed them innocent of. For, before they were apprehended, their ruin was resolved on, which was not a little forwarded by the opportunity which it gave the king of seizing all their vast possessions, and thereby repairing the losses he had suffered in the late calamities. Accordingly, after suffering every torture which human ingenuity could invent, to make them confess a guilt of which they were not even suspected, they were publicly executed in the most ignominious and cruel manner, in the sight of an astonished people, without any proof being given of their guilt, beside the bare affirmations and strained inferences of those who were both accusers and judges, and also reaped the profits of their ruin. Such scenes as these are too horrid to be dwelt on : I shall therefore return to my master, with whom I had an opportunity of coming to the knowledge of every transaction relative to this mysterious affair, the miscarriage of his attempt having made it necessary for him to disburse the money among which I came to him, and by that means continued me so long in his possession. Could any thing have heightened the opinion my first knowledge of him gave me, it must have been to see him an unconcerned spectator of the sufferings of those unhappy victims to his guilt, and to hear him argue for the justice of their punishment. But his triumph was not long ; secret and inscrutable as the Jesuits imagined they had laid their schemes, the king either received, or

pretended to have received, such information of the
as, confirmed by a multitude of facts not to be denied,
gave an appearance of probability and justice to the
being charged as accomplices with the unhappy nobles,
and treated with the utmost severity. A step that
could not have been taken on such grounds, while
these nobles were alive and at liberty, or the people
in spirits to exert the influence of their prejudices in
their behalf. But the favourable minute was come,
strike at the root of ecclesiastical tyranny, and deliver
both king and people from a yoke, under which they
had so long blindly groaned, that, at length, they
thought it just and natural. Accordingly, in the
midst of his security, my master was seized, and
hurried away to a prison, with the rest of his brethren;
and all his papers and effects secured for the govern-
ment. Of the former they could make but little use,
as it is an invariable rule with all the order never to
keep any by them, whose discovery may endanger
them, or their designs; but the latter were turned
to ready account.

In this dissipation I fell to the lot of one of the
officers, who, in his search, took an opportunity to
secrete the bag in which I was, and that very night
lodged his acquisition with a banker, for fear of
detection.

CHAP. XXXVIII.

meets another acquaintance at his new master's. Relation of the history of honest Aminadab. Address of his son. He enters into business at sea, in which Chrysal suffers a great misfortune. Ingratitude to his uncle justly rewarded. He enters into a new service.

scarce settled in the possession of my new master, whom I found to be a concealed Jew, when he entered his counting-house, the sight of him made me almost distrust my senses. Nor was my master less : ' O ! God of Abraham ! said he, ' is not this the son of my brother Aminadab ! Where hast thou been ? And where is thy father ? He has been sought from Dan to Beer-

His spoiling that Gentile, that Egyptian, has been a joy to all the brethren ! but I am amazed to see thee here : I hope he is safe out of the reach of every Christian power.'

' brother of my father,' replied the son of Aminadab, ' mention not that unhappy affair, if thou hast a mind to kill thy wretched nephew with me.'

' My father is dead !'—' But where is thy father, nephew,' interrupted my master hastily, ' is the wealth ?'—' All lost ! all buried with the bottom of the ocean !' replied the nephew. ' lost ! The wealth all lost ! O my brother

'O Aminadab, my brother! my brother! Since the destruction of Jerusalem, there fell not such a misfortune on our tribe! the wealth all lost! O Aminadab, my brother! my brother!'—'Alas, my father, I faint through weariness, weakness, and hunger; I have not even bread this day; let us retire into the inner chamber, and when my soul is refreshed with a morsel of bread and a drop of water, I will put ashes on my head, and ungird my loins, and then unfold the whole unhappy story to thee.'

The repast was literally what he had asked; and, as soon as it was ended, and the young Aminadab and his uncle seated on the floor together, in that posture of mourning, the former proceeded thus: 'By the letters which my father wrote to thee from England, in the sacred cypher of our family, thou wert informed of his intended return into his native land of Africa, and invited to meet him at Tetumac and share in his fortune. This he told me while we were upon our voyage; but thy better angel prevented thee, and saved thee the labour and loss of such a journey in vain.'

'The ship, on board which we unfortunately embarked, was a Dutchman bound for the coast of Italy, but was to land us at Gibraltar, from whence we knew we could get an immediate passage over. But, behold, when we were just in view of the port; when the sight of his native land made the soul of my father rejoice, and we thought of nothing but safety and content, a Saltee rover gave chase to our ship. The Dutch captain immediately crowded all the sail he could to escape; but, the wind dying away, and the pirate gaining upon us with oars, he came to my father with tears in his eyes, and told

'him that we were all ruined, for he had neglected
'to bring a pass. This news was like a clap of
'thunder to my father, who too well knew the conse-
'quence of their finding such a mass of wealth in his
'possession ! " Wretch that I am," exclaimed he,
'why did I venture with one of thy sordid nation ?
'slaves to Mammon, who would hazard liberty and
'fortune to save such a trifle." Then turning about,
'and going into his cabin, he stood some moments,
'as if lost in thought, when bursting into an ecstatic
'rage, he snatched up the coffer, in which his gold
'and jewels were, from under the head of his bed,
'and embracing it eagerly, " I have gained thee."
'said he, " I have earned thee with anxiety and toil ;
'and I will not lose thee now ! O Jonas, send thy
'whale to receive me, and bear me to the land of my
'fathers. I will not be a laughing stock to the Gen-
'tiles, nor a bye-word in my father's house." Saying
'which words he rushed upon the deck, and before
'any person could possibly prevent him, he plunged
'into the sea, with the coffer in his arms, and was
'never seen more. While we stood amazed at this
'rashness, the heavens, as if appeased with the sa-
'crifice, immediately sent a wind, that filled our
'fluttering sails, and soon bore the ship, delivered
'thus of its Jonas, out of the reach of the enemies.
'You may better conceive than I can describe the
'situation I was in at this event : I prostrated myself
'on the shore, when we landed at Gibraltar, and
'bemoaned my misfortune with tears and lamenta-
'tions. But this afforded no relief to my distress,
'and something I must do to earn a morsel of bread.
'I therefore sold all my superfluous raiment for four
'ducats, for all our money was in the coffer, and
'with these did I purchase some eggs and fruits, which
'I sold again in the garrison, to support my life, till
'I should have an opportunity of coming to thee, my

‘ father, for advice and assistance in this distress : and
‘ now behold these four ducats are become twelve
‘ ducats in my hands, and that is all my worldly
‘ wea.th.’

The uncle covered his face with his hands, and remained silent some time. At length he spoke to his nephew in these words : ‘ It is in vain, O son of my brother, to mourn for what is not to be remedied ; holy David wept no longer for his child after he was dead : let us, therefore, arise and think of something that may, if not retrieve thy mighty loss, at least administer relief to thy distress. Thou hast been initiated in the mysterious art of lessening the weight, without defacing the image, on the golden coins of these idolaters. This was the first rise of thy father, who began the world as poor as thou art now, till his unwearied industry in this practice raised him from want. Follow thou, therefore, his example ; and may the God of thy fathers give thee the same success, but with as happier blessing than he found. And lo ! fortunately it has happened, that I have this very hour received a large quantity of the coin of Britain, all new from the mint. On that, therefore, thou mayest begin thine endeavours, and the fourth part of the produce of this labour shall be thine : I was just going to have sent for another, who always works for me, for a fifth ; but I am willing to give thee a profit extraordinary, to encourage thee.

‘ Thine earnings in this business will soon produce thee a considerable sum, with which thou mayest go privately to London, and purchase old clothes, which will bring great profit in Germany, as soon as this war shall be at an end. Till thou art able to provide for thyself, thou mayest eat bread

‘ here, and sleep under the shadow of my roof : be not
‘ dejected ; *honest* industry never fails of success.’

The young Aminadab was no sooner introduced thus into a way of *honest* industry, than he seemed to forget his loss, and settled himself most intently to work. I fell one of the first sacrifices to his arts, which deprived me of a fourth part of my weight, and of all my beauty : nor did my companions fare much better ; so that from a thousand of us who were in the bag, his share of the spoil was a treasure, on which he immediately commenced merchant, stocking a box with all the gaudy trinkets that could allure the ignorant, and give him an opportunity of exerting his talents of imposition.

You have often heard me mention the beauty of my figure with pleasure ; but, alas, vain boasts, it was now no more ! I came from this fiery trial with all the marks of age and infirmity so strong upon me, that I could not forbear comparing myself and my companions to a number of British soldiers, just come from Soup Maigre and straw, in a French prison.— In this mutilated condition I was made up in a parcel, to be sent to England, against whom this trade was mostly carried on, there being no other nation who would receive their own coin, under the disgrace of such diminishing. But, before I could be sent off, an accident happened in the family of my master, the banker, which gave me a longer delay in Lisbon. I have told you that in secret he was in a Jew, though the prospect of gain made him profess Christianity, in despite of the horrors of the Inquisition. But, happy had it been for him that he had not made such profession, or that his nephew had been drowned with his father. For no sooner had his gains, in his art of diminishing, restored him a little to his spirits, than

thinking his portion of that profit too little, and insufficient besides to raise him to opulence so suddenly as he desired, he cast about how to acquire the whole, or at least a great part of his uncle's wealth, at once. He, therefore, took a proper place to work in, for his merchandise did not interrupt him in his main business, at some distance from his uncle's house; and, having conveyed a large sum of money thither to work upon, he directly informed the *holy office* of his uncle's *Judaism*, with directions how to detect him in it, concluding, that, when he should be seized, there would be no inquiry made after the money that was in his own hands, as he knew it was impossible he should ever escape from thence. And though this was but a poor pittance, in comparison of the sums which he knew would be forfeited, yet he comforted himself with the thought that it was more than he could any other way hope to obtain from him. But he was deceived by his avarice, and justly involved in the ruin which he drew upon his benefactor. For when the officers of the inquisition took possession of his uncle's effects, finding an entry in his books of the money in his hands, they went directly in quest of it, and that so unexpectedly, that they caught him at his work, beyond a possibility of evasion or escape.

This is a crime never forgiven in any state. He was therefore immediately delivered up to the civil power, from which he received a death not less cruel than that of his uncle from the inquisition. Of all the human sufferings I had yet seen, except in the case of the sacrifices, this gave me the greatest pleasure, as there is no crime that can deform the heart of man more than ingratitude.

I here changed my service of course, and entered into that of the *holy office*, to the judge of which I

was delivered the day I was taken out of the possession of the unfortunate Jew. I have before given you my sentiments on the absurdity of thinking to please the Deity, by cruelty to his creatures, in the instance of the human Passover of the Jews. The same arguments will hold here; and with this additional force, that cruelty of every kind is, if possible, more absurd under the Christian dispensation than any other, as, beside the general laws of nature and reason, the particular laws of Christianity do, every where, clearly and expressly command brotherly love; tenderness and compassion, forbidding every appearance of cruelty under the severest denunciations of wrath.

But there has been so much, and that so well said, on this subject already; and the nature of the sufferings of those unhappy wretches who are brought before this tribunal is so well known, that I shall spare myself the pain of the repetition, and only mention one affair, the circumstances of which appeared singularly affecting to me.

CHAPTER XXXIX.

An uncommon criminal appears at the tribunal of the holy office. A love-scene in a strange place. The history of Pheron and Ilissa.

THE next day after I came into the possession of the inquisitor, there appeared at his tribunal a person of a most august presence, though overcast with all the melancholy which his unhappy situation could inspire.—He seemed to be advanced in years, but not past the vigour of life, and was distinguished from the national look of the Portuguese, by an uncommon turn of feature, which shewed him of another people.

As soon as he was brought to the place appointed for him, the inquisitor, with an awful solemnity in his voice and manner, addressed him thus: ‘Thou art once more brought to this tribunal, to try if the stubbornness of thine heart has yet relented, and thou wilt confess thy guilt.’—‘I told thee before, O judge of the faith of Christians!’ replied the prisoner, with a composed look and determined voice, ‘I told thee before, and I repeat it again, that I am not conscious of any thing that should incur the censure of this tribunal: nor shall all the tortures which the inventive cruelty of man can inflict upon this wretched body make me lie against mine

‘immortal soul, or acknowledge guilt.’ ‘to which I am
‘a stranger. But tell me of what I am accused, and
‘my conscience shall direct my lips to answer thee
‘the truth. Perhaps I may unwittingly have erred;
‘thou knowest that I have not always professed the
‘Christian faith, according to the laws established
‘here: pardon, then, the errors of mine ignorance,
‘and instruct me to avoid the like for the future.
‘And, O! I adjure thee, by thy Christian faith, to
‘relieve my heart from the anxiety that tears it, for
‘the fate of my daughter! O! let me know’——

His adjuration was broken off at these words by the officers of the court; and, his answer not being satisfactory, he was remanded back to prison, without any further questions; with the strongest menaces of severity; though, in secret, the judge ordered him to be treated with tenderness and respect, and supplied with every comfort and convenience of life, that could mitigate the horrors of a prison.

My master then withdrew, and, changing his judicial robes for a more convenient and splendid dress, retired to his own apartments, where, after the respectful ceremony of sending to desire admission, he went into a particular chamber, in which was a young female, whom he approached with all the timid tenderness of love. ‘I have seen thy
‘father, my dearest Ilissa,’ said he, ‘and he is well;
‘nor shall any human means be wanting to preserve
‘him so.’

‘Why, then, may I not see him?’ replied the lady, ‘how can I trust thy words, who hast
‘already deceived me?’—‘Thou knowest, my love,’ returned he, ‘that thy request is impossible; and if

'I have deceived thee, by promising compliance with it, it was only to calm the transports of thy passion, that in a cooler moment thou mightest hearken to the voice of love and happiness.'—
'Mention not happiness to me in this place! Can happiness be without liberty? Is a prison the proper scene or love? But I will be deceived no longer! I will see my father, or I will not live. Grant me this request, and expect my gratitude. Thou knowest that for myself I fear not thy power! Thou knowest that immediate death is ever in my reach. Trifle not, therefore, with me any longer; restore me to my father; restore us both to liberty; and then, then only, speak to me of love.'—'Thou hast conquered, my Ilissa; thou hast conquered! Your father shall be restored to you; and we will all fly together to thy native land, where we shall live in happiness: but this cannot be compassed on a sudden; it will require both time and address to secure our retreat. But when I have done this for my Ilissa, can I be sure of her love? Will her heart return the sacrifice I make?'—'I have told thee that my heart is grateful; I tell thee now it is not insensible to softer passions. Urge me no further. When I am freed from this prison, and my father is present to give the sanction of his authority to my actions, I promise thee to become thy wife: and my inclination, which has never yet contradicted my duty, will not find it difficult to pay the love I promise at the altar.'

These words raised my master's heart into an ecstasy; he prostrated himself at her feet, he kissed her hand, and swore eternal love. The rest of the day was spent in forming schemes for their escape, and planning scenes of future happiness; in the prospect of which, their unequal years seemed to

raise no cloud. The lady appeared to be about eighteen : her beauty, though very great, was rather majestic than soft ; different from the Bohemian lady I mentioned before, an air of grandeur kept every one around her at an awful distance, and the flash of her eye, like lightning, terrified the heart it warmed. Her lover was just past his meridian, but still in all the vigour of his life, and far from disagreeable in his appearance or conversation.

There was something so extraordinary in this affair, that it raised my strongest curiosity to know the circumstances of it ; nor was I long at a loss. In the happiness of his heart that evening, my master presented a jewel of immense value to the lady, from whom, in the way of gallantry, he asked a tablet, cased with gold, as a return. The lady refused not his request, but, at giving it, desired that he would be careful of it, as she esteemed it much beyond its apparent value, it having been given her by her father.

The moment I heard her say this, and saw him put the tablet in his pocket, I knew my curiosity would be gratified by the *spirit of the golden case*. As soon, therefore, as my master retired to rest, I entered directly into his heart, and, summoning, by our sympathetic impulse, the spirit I wanted, I shewed him my curiosity, which he complied with, by a look which signified these words :— ‘ There is something
‘ so extraordinary in the whole history of the persons
‘ who have raised your curiosity, that it will be neces-
‘ sary to trace it from the beginning, to give you the
‘ satisfaction you desire. The father of the young
‘ lady, who gave me to our master, is the person
‘ whom you saw this morning at his tribunal. His
‘ name, in his own country, was Pheron ; he is a

‘ native of Abyssinia, where his ancestors have possessed ample territories for many ages, being descended from the race of their kings.

‘ From the first dawn of reason in the mind of Pheron, he shewed the strongest desire for knowledge, and the steadiest attachment to virtue. The advances of human knowledge have not been so great in those countries as here ; yet natural reason has been able to discover the sublime truths of morality, the practice of which is called wisdom, and the time consumed here in fruitless speculation devoted to it ; by which means, if men are not so knowing, they are certainly more wise. In this happy employment passed the first years of the youth of Pheron, till riper manhood calling him to the service of his country, he went at the head of his father’s vassals, to repel the invasions of the Ethiopians. His success was so great in this first essay of his arms, that he not only repelled the invaders, but also carried the war into their own country, where, after many victories, he compelled them to sue for peace.

‘ The fame of his actions soon reached the ear of his sovereign, who sent for him to his court, and rewarded his services, by giving him his sister in marriage. Dignities, in those countries, are not prostituted to the support of luxury and idleness. Pheron returned home with his bride, to govern and protect his people, who, safe in his care, pursued their usual occupations ; war not being there made a constant profession, nor the gratification of the worst passions of human nature reduced into a science, and practised by rule. The peace which Pheron had made was not injurious to his enemies, and therefore was preserved by them, which gave

him leisure to attend to the improvement of his country, and instruction of his people.

He had lived in this happy state some years, when there arrived a person in his country, who gave an unexpected turn to his affairs. The situation of those nations is such, that the inhabitants themselves rarely ever travel; nor is the face of a stranger seen in an age among them. This made the arrival of this man the more taken notice of; he was immediately introduced to Pheron, to whose friendship his knowledge in several branches of science soon recommended him. When the stranger had thus established an interest with him, he at length disclosed to him the motive of his coming into a country so remote from his own; he told him that he had undertaken this hazardous and painful journey in pure obedience to the divine command of instructing the ignorant in the knowledge of salvation. He explained to him the mysteries of the christian religion; the hierarchy of Rome; the divine foundation of its power; and the several orders in its government, in so forcible a manner, that he soon made a convert of him.

Pheron had always adored the name of Christ, but never till now knew what it was to be a Christian. One only book of his gospel had he ever seen, and from that he could understand no more, than that faith in the death of Christ for the redemption of mankind, in obedience to the self-evident laws of morality, with the pious worship of the one God alone, was the whole religion taught by him. It is not strange, therefore, if the glorious fabric of the church, as represented by this Jesuit, for such he was, had all the effect he could desire upon him, the natural inquisitive turn of his mind making him

‘ listen with eagerness to every thing which seemed
‘ to open a new prospect to it. Nor was he content
‘ with his own knowing these sublime doctrines; he
‘ also instructed his wife, whom he tenderly loved,
‘ and their example converted the greatest part of his
‘ people; for nothing could prevail upon him to at-
‘ tempt forcing their assent. But this did not satisfy
‘ him; the descriptions which he had heard of the
‘ learning, piety, and glory of Rome, had filled his
‘ soul with an ardent desire to see that metropolis of
‘ the world, that he might learn its virtues, and trans-
‘ plant them into his own country. He commu-
‘ nicated this thought to his instructor, who, fired
‘ with the glory of such a proselyte, encouraged him
‘ in it by every argument he could use. This deter-
‘ mined his resolution to make an attempt, the hazards
‘ of which would be rewarded with such happy con-
‘ sequences. He therefore prepared all things for
‘ his journey, in which his wife would bear him com-
‘ pany, and also bring her only child, the lady whom
‘ you saw to-day, to receive the benediction of his
‘ holiness; and, committing the government of his
‘ people to his brother, and taking jewels and gold of
‘ an immense value, to defray the expenses of his
‘ journey, he set out with a company sufficient to
‘ protect him from the dangers of travelling through
‘ such inhospitable countries, and arrived without any
‘ accident at the Red Sea, where he embarked on
‘ board a ship for Alexandria.

‘ While he waited here for a ship bound to Italy,
‘ the plague deprived him of his instructor and his
‘ wife. He was at first inconsolable for his loss;
‘ but virtue soon awoke reason to his guard, and his
‘ care for his daughter made him careful of himself.
‘ His attendants would have persuaded him to return
‘ directly home, as he had lost his guide; but the loss

‘ of his wife made the thought of home a torture to him. He, therefore, sent them back, and resolved to settle his daughter in a convent, and enter into the monastic life himself at Rome.

‘ With this design he embarked in the first ship that sailed for Europe, not being able to bear the sight of a place which had been so fatal to him. The ship was bound to this place, but, for a large sum of money, the commander engaged to land him at Leghorn; but happening to come to the knowledge of his wealth on the passage, he brought him directly hither, where he was no sooner landed, than he informed the inquisitor, who is his brother, who immediately seized both Pheron and his daughter, *for errors in their opinions*, and confined them in the prisons of the *holy office*, where they have now been above a year. The first motive of this outrage was the stranger’s wealth, an unpardonable crime in that court, and which would soon have brought them to an unhappy death. But the beauty of the daughter has hitherto deferred their fate, and, by what you have overheard to-day, may probably prevent it entirely.’

CHAPTER XL.

The love adventure continued. The inquisitor visits Pheron, and obtains his consent. He employs an English sailor, whom he sets at liberty, to assist him in his designs.

THE inquisitor's heart was too full of love to let him sleep long; he arose about midnight, and taking the keys of the prison, which were every night deposited with him, he went directly to visit the father of Ilissa.

He found him wrapped in so profound a sleep, that his approach did not awake him; a sight so unusual in those mansions of despair astonished him; he paused a moment in admiration, gazing at him, to try if he could trace that virtue in his face, which made his heart superior to such terrors. Just then a smile of indignation flashed over the face of Pheron; and, in the allusion of imagination, he cried out, 'It is in vain! My conscience is secure, and I despise your tortures.'—As he said these words, the working of his mind awoke him, when, seeing my master standing at the side of his bed, the scene seemed to him, in his surprise, to be continued; and he proceeded thus: 'I have told thee, that thy tortures should not bend my soul to falsehood, and now thou shalt find it so.'—'O father of Ilissa!' returned my master, melted into tenderness at such a sight, 'I come not to give thee torture! I bring the balm of

' comfort to thy soul !'—' Art thou not the inquisitor ?'—' I am, O Pheron ! and thy friend.'—' Am I awake ? Is this, or was the former, but a dream ? Guard me, good heaven ! Let me not fall from virtue !'—' Such virtue ever is the care of heaven ! Pheron, behold thy friend ! the proselyte of thy virtues. The time admits not many words ; I come to offer thee liberty, and concert with thee the methods of our obtaining happiness. Thy Ilissa'—' Heaven guard my child !'—' Thy Ilissa is well, and happy in her father's welfare !'—' O my child ! my child ! But shall I ever see her again ?'—' You shall ; she shall be restored to your bosom, and never torn from it more.'—' Good gracious judge ! O ! when ? O ! how ?—My child ! my child !'—' Suppress your joy a moment ; the beauties of Ilissa have triumphed over the malice of her fate ! She has found a lover, who offers happiness to her and you.'—' Does my child love him ? Is he an honest man ?'—' His life will prove him such ! He offers to restore you and your Ilissa to liberty, and to accompany you both to your native country, for there cannot be any safety in Europe for you, after you leave this place ; your escape from whence, and every circumstance relating to your return, shall be his care. Nor will he demand the reward his heart pants for, till your safety shall remove every fear, every doubt of his sincerity.'

' O name the generous man !'—' Behold him at your feet ! Receive me for your son.'—' Thee ! the inquisitor ! who threatened me with torture !' ' But treated thee with tenderness, treated Ilissa with respect.' ' Make me know that !' ' I ask no favour but on that condition. If I procure liberty for you and your Ilissa ; if I restore you to your native land, and accompany you thither ! if your Ilissa

‘ acknowledges the services of my love, and a
 ‘ your consent to reward them, will you confirm
 ‘ bliss, and own me for your son?’ ‘ I will, and thi
 ‘ kind heaven that gave me such a son.’

Saying this, he embraced my master, who, in a
 words, let him know the scheme he had formed
 their escape, and then left him to his happy ref
 tions while he went to prosecute it. In one of
 cells of the Inquisition there was confined an Eng
 seaman, who had been seized and secretly conve
 thither for some disrespectful expressions against
divinity of Saint Dominic. The manly, modest re
 lution with which he had refused to own the au
 rity of their tribunal, and his firmness under the f
 tortures, marked him out to the inquisitor as the per
 proper for his design; for he would not trust
 one of his own country, not even his brother, wh
 treachery to Pheron he now abhorred.

As soon as he opened the door of his cell, t
 sailor, whose soreness prevented his sleeping w
 sound, perceived him; and, imagining it was a su
 mons to a repetition of the torture, he sprang up
 far as his chains would admit him, and cried, ‘ Hal
 ‘ who comes there?’ The inquisitor, advancing, s
 answered, ‘ A friend.’ ‘ Aye! damn all such friend
 replied the sailor. ‘ I suppose you come to give
 ‘ another toasting; but if my hands were out of t
 ‘ bilboes, I’d send you off with a salt eel for yo
 ‘ supper.’

‘ Moderate your rage a moment, my friend; I co
 ‘ to set you free, if you desire, and will deserve
 ‘ Avast hauling, brother! I do not understand yo
 ‘ Why, do you not desire to be free?’ ‘ Desire! Ay
 ‘ that I do! but I may whistle for that wind long enou
 ‘ before it will blow.’ ‘ Perhaps not; perhaps th
 ‘ wind, as you say, is nearer blowing than you im
 ‘ gine. What would you do to be free?’ ‘ Do! I
 ‘ burn the inquisition, and cut the inquisitor’s throa
 ‘ I’d do any thing but turn papist, or fight again

‘Old England.’ ‘Honest Briton! But suppose I should set you free, would you serve me faithfully in one thing that is neither against your country nor your religion?’ ‘Belay that, and I’ll warrant you, if I say it, I’ll do it, without more words. I am no landsman, nor Portuguese.’ ‘Well, then, I’ll take your word; and so come with me.’ The sailor was so surprised, he scarce knew whether he was asleep or awake; however, as soon as the inquisitor had unlocked his chains, he shrugged his shoulders, and followed him, without more questions.

When they were come into my master’s apartment, he made the sailor sit down, and giving him some wine to cheer his spirits, ‘you are now at liberty, my friend,’ said he, ‘without any further condition, and may go where you please: but, if you will serve me in an affair I shall mention to you; you shall have reason to think of this night with pleasure as long as you live.’—‘Serve you, master!’ replied the sailor, ‘that I will! name but what you would have me do; that is, as I said before—you understand me—and I’ll do it, though it was to hand the main-top-gallant sail in a storm at midnight, when the yard was broke in the slings, and it was not my watch; for if it was a man’s watch, do you see, it would be but his duty; and there is no merit in a man’s doing his duty—I am no flincher. I never say aye when I mean no: though I say it, I am a gentleman; my father was a lieutenant of a man of war, and I have been at sea these five and thirty years man and boy, and never was once brought to the gang-way in all that time. If the noble captain that rated me a midshipman twenty years ago, had lived to be an admiral, I should have been an officer before now.

The honest openness of heart that appeared in the sailor's giving his own character made my master hear him with pleasure, and place an entire confidence in him. As soon as he had finished, therefore, he opened his scheme to him, and the sailor undertook to go to London, buy a good ship, and freight her for Alexandria, and to call at Lisbon in his way, and to take my master and his friends on board; to do which he gave him money and jewels to a great amount; the latter he was to dispose of in London, and account with the inquisitor for the surplus, after the purchase of the ship and cargo, which were to be his own, in reward for his trouble, as soon as he had made his voyage.

All things being thus settled, the sailor was just departing, when, on a sudden thought, he turned short on the inquisitor: 'Steady,' said he, 'steady; so far go right before the wind, and all's well. But whom do you mean to clap aboard me when I come? If it is the Pretender, or the French king, here take back your trinkums; I'll be damned before I'll help either of them to make his escape.' 'Never fear, my friend,' replied the inquisitor, scarce able to contain his laughter at the strangeness of such a thought, 'I promise you it is neither of these: I promise you not to do any thing against your king or your religion.' 'But shall we not have one dash at this damned place?' added the sailor. 'Shall we not set it on fire, and cut the inquisitor's throat? I'll bring a gang of jolly boys that would shoot the gulph of hell, to have a stroke at Devil Dominic; shall not we see the inquisition on fire, and cut the inquisitor's throat?' 'We will consider about those things: but you had better lose no time; and let me once more caution you not to be seen in Lisbon

'at present, and to be as expeditious as possible in your return.' 'Never fear, master; never fear,' replied the sailor, and shaking him heartily by the hand, away he went.

I here quitted the service of the inquisitor, being among the money which he gave to the sailor.

CHAPTER XLI.

The sailor goes to London, buys a ship, and returns to Lisbon, where he takes his passengers on board. His behaviour on meeting a French ship. He lands his passengers at Alexandria, returns home, and marries.

MY new master no sooner found himself at liberty, than he hasted away to the sea-side, without ever stopping to look behind him, and, luckily finding the packet just ready to sail, he was out of sight of Lisbon before morning.

Never was a heart so intent upon executing a commission faithfully as his: he thought of nothing else all the passage, and the moment he arrived in London, he sold the jewels, bought a ship, manned her well, and having laid in a proper cargo, set sail for Lisbon, and was there before his employer, imagined he was arrived in London.

I had been an idle spectator of these transactions, for it so happened that, in all my master's dealings, he never offered me in payment; at which I was greatly delighted, as I was very desirous of witnessing the completion of the inquisitor's enterprise.

The moment he arrived in Lisbon, he gave notice to his friend, whose joy at his fidelity and expedition is not to be expressed. He immediately had the treasures; which he designed to take with him, conveyed secretly on board, and, as soon as the wind served, embarked himself with his friends in the night, and obliged my master to sail directly, though greatly to his dissatisfaction, because he would not consent to his firing the prison of the inquisition, and cutting the inquisitor's throat.

Heaven seemed to approve of the undertaking, sending a fair wind, which soon carried us out of the fear of our enemies. It is impossible to conceive an happier company than were now together; nor did the blunt festivity of my master, add a little to the pleasure of the voyage, which met but one cloud, that seemed first to threaten a good deal, but soon blew over.

When we were about half our voyage, my master entered the cabin hastily one morning, and, with a kind of fierce delight flashing in his eyes, says to the inquisitor, whom he always called owner, ' Well, owner, you shall now see what English boys can do; there is a large Frenchman bearing down upon us, but if you do not see him sheer off as short as if he had got foul of a lee shore, I will never take the helm again, if he is not even obliged to drop anchor to bring him up along side of us; and, as I expected

some such thing, I took a letter of marque, so that you need not fear of being hanged for a pirate, if the worst should happen.'

But, delighted as my master was, his passengers did not seem so well pleased with the news, especially his owner, who was not used to fighting, and beside was too anxious for his escape with his fair prize, to think of any thing with pleasure which could possibly deprive him of her.

They all went directly, therefore, upon the deck, and seeing the ship really coming towards them, the inquisitor went into the cabin, that he should not be observed by the men, and, sending for my master, accosted him thus: 'Surely, my friend, you cannot mean to wait for that ship?' (for we were 'ying-to') 'she certainly means to attack you.' 'And so let her, owner,' replied my master: 'I'll warrant she gets as good as she brings.' 'But consider, my friend,' returned the inquisitor, 'consider we are on board you.' 'Well, owner, and what then!—you are not afraid? The lady may be stowed safe below, and you will stand as good a chance as another: you are not afraid?' 'My good friend, I have not time now to explain my reasons to you; but if you have any regard for me, you will instantly crowd all the sail you can, and get clear of this affair—I desire it—I beg it.' 'Why look you, owner, what needs all these words? If so be you order us, we must put about, to be sure, for the ship is yours; but then the honour of Old England, consider that: the honour of Old England!' 'O, my friend, I can consider nothing but my desire to avoid this danger; so once more I beg.' 'Enough said, enough said.' Then going upon the deck, 'Well, my lads, our owner does not chuse this

'brush, while the lady is on board ; so we must about ship : but, as we come back, *Soup-maigre* shall pay for it.' And, saying this, he obeyed the desire of his owner as faithfully as if it had been his own, only not with the same appearance of pleasure, not being able to avoid ejaculating *damn fear*, at every turn of the tune he whistled, as he walked the deck, the rest of the day.

He had so punctually observed his owner's instructions, in getting a good ship, that we were soon out of sight of the Frenchman ; nor did we meet with any thing disagreeable during the remainder of the voyage.

The day after this affair, when they had all recovered their good-humour, my master addressed his owner thus : ' Now, owner, while the sky is clear, and we have nothing else to do, I had better give you an account of your money. Here is the log-book, which you may overhaul at your leisure, though the sooner the better. This is the time : there is no taking a good observation in a storm, as may happen by and by : you will find all as fair as a new cable : but I must give you one point to direct your reckoning by, and that is this ; you bade me buy a ship and freight her, and so forth, and she and the cargo should be my own, after I had done your job this trip. Now, owner, it is very true that a less vessel than this might have made the run, but then you seemed so desirous to be safe, that I thought it best to take a bargain in this stout ship, which I knew to be as good a sea-boat as ever turned to windward, and able to go, hank for hank, with any thing that swims the sea, as we shewed when we run the Frenchman out of sight yesterday, though it went against my heart to do it ; but so

'matter for that now; the ship is your's, and you
'have a right to be obeyed. However, there is the
'account, and here is the rest of your money, of
'which I did not lay out a shilling that I could avoid,
'but one guinea, which I gave Will Crosstree, to
'repair his rigging, and one I gave Black Moll of
'Wapping, to heave down; and I could not well
'avoid those neither, for Will was an old mess-mate,
'and I owed Moll for many a good turn in her way.
'But all this signifies nothing to you; they can be
'stopped in the account. And now, owner, as you
'may think this ship cost too much, and that the cargo
'is too good, I will not keep you to your bargain; she
'is your own, and all that is in her, only pay the men:
'as for me, I am satisfied with having got out of that
'damned inquisition, and leave the rest to yourself.
'If you think that I have deserved any thing, well
'and good; if not, I do not fear bread while the sea
'flows round Old England; all that grieves me is,
'that you would not let us set fire to the inquisition,
'and cut the inquisitor's throat.'

If my master's bluntness, in the affair of the French ship, gave offence to his owner, the honesty of his speech restored him to his warmest esteem, and made Pheron, who was present, cry out in a rapture, 'Thank heaven, there is still some honesty among mankind.' 'Honesty, aye,' replied my master, 'a little among the tars of Old England! a little.'

The inquisitor having recovered from the astonishment into which such nobleness of soul threw him, returned the account unopened, with these words, 'I am convinced your account must be just, and I freely make you a gift, not of this ship and cargo, for they are justly your own already, but of the rest of the money which is in your hands.' 'What all,

‘owner! all!’ ‘All, my friend; if it were many times so much, you justly merit it.’ ‘But then, owner, had you not better sign the account, if you please, for fear of after-reckonings with your executors; for I hate the law damnably, ever since I lost a year’s pay for hindering our boatswain’s mate’s brother from beating his wife: The brimstone swore I beat her husband, and so I paid for meddling but it was the lawyer’s fault that set her on. Damn all lawyers, say I.’ ‘Well then, my honest, worthy friend, there is a receipt; and I wish you success equal to your merit; and you cannot have more.’ Enough said, owner, enough said: I thank you, I thank you.’

The remainder of our voyage was one continued scene of happiness. My master landed his passengers at Alexandria, from whence they soon set out for Pheron’s country, and, at his taking leave of them, advised them to be careful how they ventured in any of the ships of those countries, which, he assured them, were not better than bum-boats, nor did their mariners know any more of the sea than a Thames waterman.

Having finished this his first business, he proceeded to dispose of his cargo, for which he met so good a market, and made so profitable a return from thence home, that as soon as he arrived, his landlady’s daughter at Gosport, whom he had been in love with many years, but never dared to speak to till now, readily consented to marry him. One thing, however, I must not omit, and that was that he kept a constant look out all the voyage home, for that Frenchman he had fled from so much against his will; and was greatly concerned that he could not meet him, to have one brush for the honour of Old England.

CHAPTER XLII.

Chrysal enters into a new service, and sails for the coast of Mexico. He again changes his service, and comes into the possession of the captain of an English man of war. His master finds an ingenious excuse for returning home; but is unexpectedly stopped short by the way. In the common course of business Chrysal changes his service: Character of his new master.

I DID not remain with my master to be witness of his happiness; for, on the morning of his marriage, he paid me to the master of a vessel who was immediately about to sail to the coast of Mexico, in hopes of falling in with some rich Spanish merchant ships that were expected in those seas. The first vessel we saw, however, proving an English man of war, I passed, in the way of business, to the purser thereof, and from him to the captain, who, not unlike the officer to whom I was presented by the Spanish commander in the shape of a doubloon, had been so well satisfied by the Spaniards *for not doing his duty*, that he was very desirous of returning home. However impatient he might be to accomplish this wish, it was necessary for him to find some pretence to justify a conduct so contrary to his duty, the time appointed for his continuing on that station not being near expired.

But a proper knowledge of the world is never at a loss for expedients. He immediately came to a right understanding with the master of the ship, who alarming him suddenly at midnight with an account that her stern-post was loose, and the rest of the officers between sleeping and waking formally signing his report without examining, he bore away directly for home with an happy heart, anticipating in imagination the enjoyment of all those pleasures which he had hitherto looked at with a longing eye from a distance.

When a man, confiding in his own wisdom, quits the straight path to strike out a nearer to his wishes, he generally blunders into that which leads directly to their disappointment. My master had not proceeded many days on his voyage, when he fell in one morning, just at the dawn, with a mighty fleet, from which it was impossible for him to escape. His anxiety made him instantly conclude them enemies. He cursed his fate in the bitterness of his soul, and leaving the care of the ship to his officers, pretended to be sick, and threw himself on his bed, in agonies little short of despair. ‘Was it for this?’ exclaimed he, wringing his hands and gnashing his teeth, ‘was it for this I betrayed my trust, and favoured the enemies whom I was sent to distress?—For this did I put my honour in the power of a venal wretch, and desert my station in direct disobedience to my orders! But I am justly rewarded! I have stopped at nothing to gather wealth, and now I lose that and my liberty together. May every villain meet the same fate!’

But the severity of his distress lasted not long. As soon as it was clear day, the fleet which caused his fears was found to be English; the moment he

was informed of which he recovered from his sickness, and, putting the best face he could upon the matter, went to wait upon the admiral.

Though the fleet which the admiral commanded was irresistibly superior to any that could possibly be opposed to it, he was so desirous of every addition of strength, that he received my master with evident pleasure; and never inquiring what had been the cause of his quitting his station, informed him whither they were going, and congratulated him on the opportunity he would have of making his fortune. But this opportunity, promising as it might appear, had no temptations for my master, whose thoughts were turned another way. However, to carry off the chagrin which he could not conceal, he expressed his concern in the strongest terms at not being able to bear a part in so glorious an enterprise, and produced the report of the condition of his ship, by which she was represented to be incapable of service, the reason, he alleged, for his having quitted his proper station. This instantly changed the whole scene. The admiral, assuming all the consequence of his unbounded authority, answered, with a supercilious look, that he would order the ship to be surveyed by the proper officers, and then turned away, without deigning to take any further notice of him. As this was no more than my master had expected, his knowledge of the world, which brought him into the scrape, soon suggested the proper means for preventing any disagreeable consequences from it. Accordingly, when the survey was regularly made next morning, he was honourably acquitted; but the master of the ship was broke for his error, and the other officers severely rebuked, for not having examined his report before they signed it.

In the course of these transactions, I changed my service for that of the admiral's secretary, who directly gave me to the admiral in some dealings between them.

When I entered into the possession of my new master, he was lolling in a listless manner on a sofa, in his state-room, where every art was exerted to counteract nature, and elude the mid-day heat, in one of the fiercest climates of the torrid zone. A gown of thinnest silk hung loosely over his large limbs; the radiance of the sun was softened by shades of linen drawn before the open windows, and kept constantly wet, to cool the air as it entered through them; and every disagreeable savour was drowned in the most delicate perfumes. The contrast between such magnificent luxury, and the condition of those whose numbers made his strength, shewed in the most glaring light the infatuation of vanity, in displaying such temptations to its own destruction, as the most implicit obedience to the laws could hardly be supposed proof to. The awkwardness with which my master bore his state shewing that it was not natural to him, I looked back to his past life, to see by what illustrious actions he had risen to such an exalted station; but, to my surprise, discovered that the foundation of his fortune had been no more than a phlegmatic indolence and servility of soul, which induced his superiors to entrust power in his hands, without apprehension of its raising him to a consequence that might clash with their designs on any future occasion.

I see you are astonished that a person of such a turn should ever engage in active scenes, or be entrusted with the conduct of an enterprise so opposite

to his disposition, as to make success improbable. To unexperienced reason such things must seem unaccountable; but the least acquaintance with the ways of man would soon reconcile you to greater absurdities. The convenience of the parent, not the genius of the child, is in general the only thing considered in the choice of a profession on which the success of life depends; and this is the reason why so few are eminent in things so easy to be eminent in; and when at length a person may have it in his power to quit a profession which he did not choose, it is too late for him to choose another, and therefore he plods on with habitual indifference, not knowing what else to do with himself.

This may remove your surprise as far as it concerns my master's first entering into, and continuing in such a way of life. As to his fitness for so difficult and important a command, that was the thing least thought of when it was entrusted to him. The insignificancy of his character, and his servility to his superiors, pointed him out as the person proper for their purpose, as they not only made them secure that he would not go beyond their orders, but would also put it in their power to arrogate to themselves the merit of success, or lay the blame of miscarriage upon him; and for these great qualifications only did they choose him on this occasion to execute the design of another, who had been guilty of the unpardonable crime of shewing that he knew more than themselves, and whose penetration and activity of soul might too probably have made him see through their designs, and push matters farther than was consistent with them.

CHAPTER XLIII.

Motives of the enterprise in which Chrysal's master was engaged. In a private conference between him and his agent, some curious secrets, in a business not generally understood, are laid open, and a seeming contradiction naturally reconciled.

WHENEVER England is at war with any of her neighbours, the effects are felt to the extremities of the globe. The armament which my master now commanded was sent against one of the most important and wealthiest settlements of the Spaniards in that part of the world; not indeed with an ambitious design of annexing it to the state, or reimbursing any part of the expenses of the war, but merely to distress the enemy by its destruction, and enrich those immediately employed in the conquest; the prospect of which, and the consequent schemes to accomplish it, so entirely engrossed the attention of them all, except my master, that they disregarded the difficulties, and ran so eagerly into the dangers of the attempt, though such and so many as were sufficient to have damped the ardour of any beings directed by reason, and not insensible to the first principle of human action, that his phlegmatic disposition was no impediment to their success, as it left them at liberty to pursue such measures as the instant occasion should shew to be expedient, without the delay of consulting him. I say, except my master;

for not all the cares of so extensive a command, all the hurry and bustle around him, could ever ruffle the characteristic stagnation of his mind.

He was just awoke from his noon-tide nap, when his clerk laid the bag in *which I was*, upon the table along with some papers. The chink of the gold immediately attracted his attention. 'Eh!' said he, rubbing his eyes and yawning, 'what is o'clock?' And being told, 'Aye!' continued he, stretching and yawning again, 'I thought I had overslept myself—I am so heavy! This climate is fit for nothing but sleeping.' Then rising languidly, 'What papers are those?' said he. 'Did I not say, I would not be troubled about business?'

'The *survey of that ship*, and your own accounts for the *out sets* of this expedition,' answered the clerk, 'which, if you please, you had better look over now, as we shall have others to attend to soon. I am sorry to say, it does not answer your expectations, but the people alledged, that they had been made to pay so extravagantly for their *contracts* that it was impossible for them to sink the qualities of the stores so low, as to be able to give you any thing worth your acceptance.'

'Not able to give me any thing!' said the admiral, who had been roused from his lethargic indifference by the first mention of his own affairs. 'They lie, the scoundrels; and I'll make them know it. The *sick-lists* shew that they have sunk them with a vengeance, and beyond every degree of reason; and if they think that I'll connive at their murdering the men, without having any share in the profit, they shall find themselves damnably *out in their reckoning*; and therefore do you go directly to every

‘purser in the fleet, and order them to have a survey
‘privately made of their worst stores, to produce
‘when I call for it. I’ll make them *come down*, and
‘handsomely too, or they shall repent it.’

‘But, Sir, is there not danger of their being provoked, by such an attack, to say *something improper*; and that *they who made the contracts* with them may do you an ill office on another occasion? There are *wheels within wheels*.’

‘Let them, if they can!’ answered the admiral, clapping his hands a-kimbo, ‘I shall trouble them no more. If I mind my *hits this trip*, I shall be as rich as the best of them, and will stay at home, and take my ease, as well as they; and as to their speaking, whom are they to speak to? Tell my brother that I am a knave! No! no! we shall hardly hear tales of each other. Things hang too close together for that. Do you, therefore, mind your business, and leave these matters to me.’ But may not they spread stories abroad, which may injure your character with the public? ‘My character! not in the least. Such stories affect only the *clerks*, and such low people, whose *perquisites* these things are *reputed* to be, and who only appear in them: but that cannot be said to injure them neither; *for what clerk ever had a character that could be injured*? Ha! ha! ha! So that your care for character, forsooth, is quite unnecessary. Do what you will, you cannot suffer in that. All you have to do is to mind your business; and when you have got money no one will inquire about your character.’

Saying this, he waved his hand to the clerk to withdraw, and then walking a turn or two about his *great cabin*, opened the money-bag, and telling the con-

ants, put a few pieces, among which I was, into his pocket, and locked up the rest in his strong box, after which he threw himself again on the sofa, to rest after the fatigue of so much business.

You seem at a loss how to reconcile the sentiment which my master discovered in his conference with the luxury and magnificence of every thing about him. But they contradict not each other in the least. In the transactions with his clerk, he shewed the genuine motions of his heart; but with the other he has nothing to do. They are entirely at the expense of the public, though in a manner not obvious to every eye, being a kind of tax established by custom on the pursers of men of war, under the appearance indeed of a *present* to their commanders, but in reality as a *bribe* for conniving at their impositions; and this tax it is that enables those commanders to live up to their rank, which their just pay would never do—a striking instance of that wise *economy*, which to save a penny lays a man under the necessity of stealing a pound.

CHAPTER XLIV.

The behaviour of Chrysal's master on hearing an interesting piece of news, with his concise method of conducting an enterprise. Chrysal changes his service for that of a person of a very different character. An eloquent speech produces the usual effects of eloquence.

MY new master had not passed his time long in this agreeable manner, when the officer next to him in command entered hastily, and told him, in a transport of joy, that the man at the mast-head had made the land. 'What land?' said my master, unmoved at the news, or the manner in which it was delivered by the other, whose eyes flashed fire as he spoke. 'What land does he make?' 'The place of our destination!' replied the officer: 'I had just then taken an observation myself, and am convinced I am right.' 'Well then,' returned my master, 'if you are sure it is the place, here are your instructions. You are to lead the van, and cover the landing, about which proper directions will be given by the general; when that is done you shall have further orders.' Then, swelling with the thought of his own consequence, and resolving to support his dignity by an uncommon effort of generosity. 'Has the fellow,' said he, 'been rewarded for his news?' 'Not yet,' answered the officer: 'the moment I heard it, I ran up myself to the mast-head, and, as

was convinced he was right, flew to acquaint you. But I shall remember him when I go back.' And, pray, when you do, give him *this* in my name,' lied my master, putting his hand into his pocket, reaching *me* to him; 'the men's spirits must be kept up. We shall have warm work of it—warm work!'

'Glorious work!' added the officer, 'the trophies of your fame will now be established in the opposite extremities of the globe. Few attain to such happiness.' 'Aye!' said the admiral, puffing and eating with the sense of his great achievements, 'have done something to be talked of in more places than one. I have endured the severities of various climates. But we must bear every thing in the service of our country! We must bear every thing without complaining.' 'Have you any farther commands, Sir,' said the officer. 'It is proper I should be on board. I see several of the ships have now made the signal of seeing land.'

'Nothing more at this time,' answered the admiral. 'You have your orders, and will take the best method to execute them. *Only observe to keep as clear as possible of that other man's scheme. I had rather I should miscarry, than appear in the least indebted to him for success.*'

My new master on this withdrew, leaving the admiral to enjoy the contemplation of his own consequence, and keep himself cool till dinner. If the silence of my late master was inconsistent with station, the activity of my present seemed to exceed the abilities of an human being. The moment got to his own ship he made a signal for all the captains in his division, and the general, to come on

board him; and then ordering his ship's crew to be called *aft*, he went to the *barricadoes*, and waving his hat over his head, 'Courage, my lads,' said he, 'the day is our's. The admiral has given us leave to take yonder town, with all the treasure in it, so that we have nothing to do now, but to make our fortunes as fast as we can, for the place can never hold out against us. The purser will give every brave fellow a can of punch to drink prosperity to Old England, and then we will go about our business with spirit. We shall all be as rich as Jews. The place is paved with gold, which the lubberly Dons have gathered for us. Old England for ever is the word, and the day is ours.'

This eloquent harangue had the effect that eloquence usually has, *it transported his hearers out of their senses*. They answered with three cheers, which made the welkin ring, and then went skipping and dancing with joy to get their punch; a foretaste of their good fortune, which many of them would not have given up for all their expectations. As they were going off, my master happened to see among the crowd the man who had first discovered the land, and calling to him, 'here, ship-mate,' said he, giving him a doubloon, 'here is something the admiral has sent you for your good *look-out*: and take this also from me,' giving him another, 'and I hope to give you an hundred more for hoisting your colours on the top of yonder walls.' 'Aye! noble captain,' said the sailor, shrugging his shoulders and making his best bow, 'and so I will, or it shall cost me a worse fall than from the main-top-gallant-mast-head, that is, when the ship takes a *heel*. I'll pull down proud Spain, and clap Old England in its place.'

the spirit which my master shewed in every word which interested me so far in his favour, that I was pleased at his not having parted with me on this occasion.

At this time the general and the captains were on board, and being shewn into the great cabin, 'Good news, gentlemen,' said my master in a merry voice, shaking every one of them by the hand as he entered, 'I bring you good news? Yonder is the object of our hopes, the place that is to make our fortunes, and crown us with glory, if it is not our own faults, for the admiral has given us general orders to proceed in the best manner we can, and without losing time or opportunity in waiting to consult him on every occasion.'

The news filled them all with the highest spirits. They congratulated each other on a success of which there was no doubt; and having concerted the measures proper to be taken, returned to their ships to put them into instant execution.

CHAPTER XLV.

The general professes an uncommon motive for military ardour. An officer desires to speak with him, the mention of whose name opens some secrets in the service. Account of the officer. An extraordinary instance of ignorance of the world. He signalizes himself at the expense of his superiors, who reward him accordingly. The best qualifications for rising in the army, with reasons why things were otherwise under another commander.

AS soon as the captains of the men of war were gone, 'Now, my dearest friend,' said my master to the general, who staid, 'you will have an opportunity not only of gaining such glory as will add lustre to the dignity of your birth, but also of acquiring a fortune to support that dignity properly.' 'True?' answered the general eagerly, 'but, powerful as these motives are, my heart is stimulated by one stronger on this happy occasion.' 'How! can any motive be stronger, than honour and independence?' 'Yes, gratitude! grateful anxiety to prove myself not unworthy of his favour who procured me this opportunity. He promoted my interest with the ardour of a friend. He supported it with his whole weight; and in a manner staked his honour for my abilities. Till I have acquitted him, therefore, by a signal discharge of my duty, I can have no thought for myself.' 'These sentiments prove you worthy of

‘his favour; nor can you possibly serve yourself more, than by paying this debt honourably to him, in which I shall think myself happy to give you every instance of that assistance which the nature of my command so fortunately puts in my power.’ ‘I doubt you not; and therefore, as our unanimity deprives us of the excuse of disagreement, which former commanders in the different services have made for their miscarriages, we must be doubly careful not to omit any thing that can ensure success.’

The friends then embraced with ardour, and were just separating to attend the business of their different departments, when a subaltern officer desired to speak with the general. On hearing his name, ‘did you not know that I am engaged?’ said the general, with an embarrassed air, ‘he must wait till I am at leisure.’ ‘Don’t let me hinder you,’ said my master. ‘I am just going.’—‘You do not, in the least. He can have no business with me but what you may hear; and indeed what you must help me to extricate myself from; for I know he comes upon some scheme of *distinguishing* himself, that will only give me trouble.’

‘How can that be? If you do not approve of what he proposes, surely you have it in your power to reject it, without fear of giving him offence; or if, on the other hand, you think it practicable, and worth pursuing, I cannot suppose that any honour or advantage that can possibly accrue to him, can make you unwilling to carry it into execution.’—‘Most certainly not. The difficulty I am under is of a very different nature. The character of the man gives me reason to believe, that he will not propose any thing, which is not both practicable and important; and, as it is not in my power to

‘reward his success, his doing any thing out of the common course of duty would involve me in the highest distress, both on account of the injustice to him, and the poor figure I must make myself on so flagrant a breach of my own public declaration, that, in the disposal of all preferments, I would pay due respect to seniority, where superior merit did not give a stronger claim.’

‘Well! and why should it not be in your power to fulfil that declaration?’—‘My dearest friend, I blush to think of, much more to expose even to you the mortifying hardships laid upon me. The truth is, I have, since I made that declaration, another officer, who was in his cradle since this has been in the army, and has never yet seen the face of an enemy, put upon me for the first preferment, by one whose directions I must not disobey, however detrimental to the service.’

‘That is a disagreeable circumstance, I own. But who is this officer, your good opinion of whom gives you such apprehensions?’—‘He is a military enthusiast who knows so little of the world, as to think of rising in the army by merit alone; and with that view, not satisfied with doing his duty in the most signal manner, is always a volunteer wherever he thinks any glory can be acquired; though his own particular experience, as well as general observation, might have long since convinced him of the folly of such a thought. You must know him. This is he who, in that unlucky affair upon the coast of France, made a stand with the single company to which he belonged, (and which he had so attached to him, by giving out of his own pocket to such as behaved well a daily gratuity in addition to their pay, that they would follow him

where,) to cover the embarkation of the troops, he every officer was shifting for himself, as he really did in a great measure, till most of his little party was cut off, as it was a thousand to one but all must, unsupported as they were; though appeared, after, that if a proper force had been sent in that very place at first, or he re-inforced any time, the heavy loss and disgrace suffered that occasion might have been prevented. But that was reckoned no business of his; and before all the reward he got for his pains was to see two officers, who were not even in the action, cover his head, and the company's money, which had lost along with all his own baggage, refused to be made good to him, because he was a volunteer at that attack. For, sorry I am to say it! that is not the way to raise in the army now a-days. Here a man has not interest to push him forward, nor able to sing a good song, or pimp well, or bring an handsome wife or sister, with a proper degree of humility and complaisance, will avail more than all the courage and conduct in France. In my patron's time, indeed, things were not so. Brave himself, he expected that every man under him should be brave also; nor would let any recommendation compensate for the want of merit in those who sought his favour; as his own interest and honour were naturally and inseparably connected with those of his country; and he was not lifted up to power, only to be the head of a party; nor obliged to support himself in any intrigue, without any other view or motive than that of amassing its emoluments; and therefore it has been the great misfortune of this officer, that he never served immediately under him.

CHAPTER XLVI.

Chrysal's master makes some remarks on certain matters. The method which the general took to parry the officer. Chrysal's master makes up the affair. The general gives the officer an opportunity of distinguishing himself, which he does in a signal manner.

IT is remarked that men seldom inquire into the causes of things continually before their eyes. Habitual acquaintance prevents that curiosity, which is one of the strongest incentives to knowledge. They have always seen such things, and therefore have never inquired how they came to be so.

My master, who had long observed the fact, but never thought of the cause, was struck with what his friend said. After some pause: 'I am afraid what you say is too true!' said he, 'and cannot help attributing it to a cause, not much to the credit of the commanders, who certainly would never discourage merit in others, were they not conscious they had not risen by it themselves; and therefore look upon it with an envious eye, as a reproach to them. Indeed, it can scarcely be expected, that a general, who has spent his life in paying court to a minister, or favourite, or who was preferred only for his interest in parliament, should act otherwise. But what will you do with this officer? It will have an odd look if you don't see him; at the same time, if

‘he should propose any thing of real consequence, I am absolutely at a loss how to advise you to act.’ The only method I can think of, is this: his temper is warm, and his notions of honour punctiliously high. I will, therefore, receive him with a distance that I know will hurt his sensibility, and provoke him to say something, of which I may take advantage to break off the conference, without entering into the subject of his coming; for he speaks as boldly as he acts; and thinks it beneath him to soften his sentiments by any qualifying expression.’

Accordingly, the general ordered the officer to be admitted, and asking him slightly what was his business? ‘I come, sir,’ answered he, ‘to inform you, that I have discovered a proper place for landing the troops, and formed a plan for that purpose.’ ‘You have discovered, sir!’ interrupted the general haughtily, ‘pray when, and how did you make this notable discovery?’ ‘Just now, sir!’ returned the officer, too intent upon the object he had in view to take notice of the manner of his reception. ‘The transport, in which I was, happening to stretch away a-head, I got out a boat, and have carefully reconnoitred a great part of the coast, in the thick of the enemy’s fire.’ ‘And, pray sir,’ interrupted the general again, determined not to let him explain himself, ‘who gave you orders to reconnoitre in this manner!’ ‘No one sir!’ answered the officer warmly, and hurt at the manner in which the general spoke. ‘I never wait for orders, to do any thing in which my own safety is concerned, when I think it for the advantage of the service.’ ‘When you think!’ retorted the general sternly. ‘I should be glad to know who has appointed you to judge of those things? At this rate the whole army will be generals by and by; and every one will be out

‘reconnoitering forsooth, when they should be at their posts; but I’ll put a stop to such contempt of discipline, and make you know, that it is your duty to wait for orders, not to go rambling thus, wherever you please.’ Saying which, he called one of his aides-de-camp, and putting the officer in arrest, sent him away, bursting with indignation and resentment, to his ship.

When he was gone, ‘I am very sorry,’ said my master, ‘that your engagement to that other man said you under a necessity of treating this officer so harshly. I have conceived a very good opinion of him: he appeared to be actuated by true zeal; and spoke with a confidence, that shewed he was convinced, of what he said; for which reason I am resolved to reconnoitre that place myself, and don’t doubt but I shall find his account of it to be just.’ Nor do I in the least. He has an head to plan, and an heart to execute the most important enterprizes; and I am as sorry for what I have been forced to do as you. But, as soon as I have it in my power to reward his merit, I’ll give him every opportunity of displaying it, till when this affair will keep him out of the way.’

I see you are anxious to know the sequel of this officer’s story. To avoid breaking the thread of my narrative with it, therefore, at another time, I will conclude it here.

My master, as he said, went that very night, and reconnoitered the place pointed out by the officer, whose account of it proved so just, that he repaired to him directly, and inquiring into his plan for landing the troops, found it so judicious, that he immediately adopt’ed the whole, and carried it into execution with

success. After some days, when the officer's impatience of being idle thus in the midst of action had in a great measure got the better of his resentment, and the severe loss sustained in the siege made the worth of men more attended to, my master attacked him on his *foible*, his passion for glory and zeal for the service of his country, and prevailed on him to return to his duty, on the general's making an apology for what he had done, which he attributed to his anxiety, and apprehension of the enemy's being put on their guard by his reconnoitering in that daring manner; and, to cancel the disgrace of the arrest, treated him with particular attention; and as he was now at liberty to do justice to his merit (the other, who had been imposed upon him, being provided for) gave him the first opportunity he could of signalizing himself, which he did in a manner that amply justified the opinion my master had conceived of him. The affair was this. The general had resolved to make an attack upon the principal redoubt that defended the fortress, and gave the command of it to him. The plan laid down by the general was, that an officer, with a party of men, should go from another post, just before the dawn, to reconnoitre the redoubt, and if he found that the fire of the night had made the impression expected, a signal was to be given for this officer to advance and make the attack. The other accordingly marched, but missed his way, and falling in with a lesser redoubt, mistook it for the object of his designation, and inconsiderately attacked it, upon which the signal was given for this officer to proceed. The alarm had set the soldiers in the principal redoubt upon their guard, which he perceived before he came within their shot, and being sensible that his attempt could succeed only by surprise, by one of those instantaneous efforts of genius, which mark the

true military character, he resolved, without a moment's hesitation that might discover his disappointment, to try a stratagem of his own, since that of his general had been frustrated by this mistake, and directed his march regularly towards the attack that was begun upon the lesser redoubt, as if he had been sent on purpose to support it.

Deceived by this feint, the officer who commanded in the principal redoubt, knowing the force there to be too weak to make resistance, sent the greater part of his own to their relief. This was what he had foreseen. He, therefore, continued his march slowly, till they had got beyond him; and then facing suddenly about, pushed with all speed for the redoubt they had just abandoned. The moment they saw this motion, they turned back, but the narrowness of the entrenchment in which they were, prevented their making such expedition, and coming up in a body, as his men did on the plain, so that he entered with the very foremost man of them, and made himself master of the place, with inconsiderable loss.

The importance of this redoubt, the taking of which greatly facilitated the operations of the siege, enhanced the merit of the action. Nothing else was talked of in the army, where the fortune of this officer was looked upon to be made. But no opportunity offered for promoting him during the remainder of the expedition, so that the only reward in the general's power to give him, was thanking him publicly at the head of the army, which he did in the strongest terms. Resolved, however, to be the instrument of his promotion, though he could not promote him himself, he represented him, on his return, in so advantageous a light to one, whose inclination it was known to be,

and who from his office should have had it in his power to reward merit, that he promised to do him justice.

But the delicacy of this officer's sense of honour defeated these generous intentions. He would not accept of the preferment offered him, without having at the same time reparation for the injustice he had suffered, by an honorary rank, superior to those who had been put over him; and, when this was refused, *for reason of convenience*, insisted on quitting the service, in the permission for which his patron did justice to his character in the most authentic manner, before he himself resigned an office, which he would hold no longer, than it was in his power to fulfil the declaration he had made on accepting it: 'That while he should be in that office, he would not only be a vigilant servant of the crown, but also a faithful trustee for the honest claim of the brave and deserving officer.'

CHAPTER XLVII.

Ghrysal accounts curiously for some interesting points of policy. He supports his reason for not entering into the particulars of the siege, by some remarks on war, more just perhaps than popular; and assigns a motive for courage not likely to be meant by those who give it.

I HAVE been so particular in the story of this officer, in order to give you some notion of matters, with which your manner of life has made you unacquainted. In his fate you see the consequence of a subaltern's striving to distinguish himself, by doing any thing more than his immediate duty.

This, however strange it may appear to you, who judge only from reason, is strictly consistent with the principles of modern policy, which is calculated entirely for private convenience, without the least regard to public good. Every attempt of the kind is taken for an affront by his superiors, as implying a design of forcing them to promote him, and putting himself in competition with them for the good opinion of the public, and therefore discountenanced. Indeed, if it were otherwise, few men of fortune or interest would, according to the present way of thinking, go into the army at all, as they *could not expect to enjoy their ease, or shew a prudent regard to their safety*, without being subject to disgraceful comparisons

from the *officious assiduity* or *rashness* of every man desperate in disposition or circumstances, who disregarded life and all its pleasures, or had no way of being able to live, but hazarding the loss of them.

In former times men entered into the profession of arms with a certain prospect of honour and advantage, if they could merit them, and therefore exerted all their abilities of mind and body in emulation for so tempting a prize; but now, every idler, who is unfit for any other business, *purchases* a commission, in order to *live upon the pay*; and as he is sensible that no efforts of his own can procure an addition to that pay, by raising him to an higher rank, he is satisfied to enjoy his bargain as easily as he can, and do no more than he needs must to avoid losing it. And this will account to you for the difference between the English forces now and in those days. Nor is the case otherwise with those who get into the army by interest. They depend solely upon the same interest to push them forward, and therefore give themselves no trouble to deserve promotion, which they are convinced no desert could procure them. But, to quit reflexions not likely to be regarded, and return to my story. You must not expect a minute detail of the progress of this enterprise. The operations of war are too confused to give pleasure to reason in the representation: too horrid not to give pain to humanity.

I see you think this too severe; but such thoughts are the effect of prejudice. When the victories which have been blazoned highest, and which reflected the greatest honour on those who gained them, are stripped of the false colouring laid on only to dazzle and deceive, and examined coolly, most of them, will be found owing to some unforeseen

master concluded that some accident must have happened, which was the more probable, as the ship was the worst in the fleet, and therefore, as soon as the affair was over, made his signal to come on board, that he might learn what was the matter.

Though the first sight of him might have explained the whole, the fears of his heart being visible in every feature of his haggard face, my master disdained to aggravate his distress by an appearance of severity, and only asked him coolly the reason of his not having borne down to the attack with the same expedition as the other ships.

‘Sir—Sir—Sir—’ faltered the trembling wretch, not sufficiently recovered from his fright to express the evasion he had prepared; ‘I—I made all the expedition I possibly could.’ ‘How can you have the confidence to say so,’ returned my master, ‘when there were several of your sails which you never set?’ ‘That was not my fault, Sir,’ replied the captain, resuming his natural assurance, ‘how could I set them, when I had sent the booms ashore yesterday by your orders?’ ‘The booms!’ interrupted my master, with a look of the most contemptuous astonishment. ‘Can such ignorance be possible?’ ‘Surely, you must have known, that the booms meant in my orders were those the boats are stowed on, which were to be sent ashore, that the men might not be hurt by the splinters in the attack, not those of your sails!’ ‘Very likely, Sir! it might have been so, to be sure. But as the order was to send all my booms, without any such exception, I did not think I could justify disobeying it on my own opinion.’ ‘And pray, Sir, how can you justify your quitting your station in the manner you did, when you at length made a shift to come up! Was that

a obedience to your orders, too ?' ' No, Sir ! that was quite another thing. When I came up, I saw the other ships had suffered considerably, and, as I thought they were sufficient for the purpose, I judged it best to save his majesty's ship entrusted to my care, for another occasion. That was my reason, Sir !' ' A very prudential one, truly ; but I believe you should add too, to save the captain ; for, if I mistake not greatly, that was not the least object of your care.' ' Very true, Sir ! and with good reason too, let me tell you ; as I know that the interest of my family, which has promoted me thus far, will not fail to raise me higher. Men of low birth, or whose relations will not serve them, may set no value on their lives ; but that is not my case ; I am akin to most of the nobility of my country, who always stand by their own blood, where any preferment or advantage is to be gotten ! Hem ! hem !' ' I know their interest full well,' retorted my master, scarcely able to suppress his indignation at such insolence, and the closeness with which they hang together ; but take care that you do not depend upon them too far.'

Unabashed by the manner in which this was said, the captain asked if he had any further commands, and, being answered in the negative, marched off in triumph.

There are some crimes, in the punishment of which men are more than ordinarily severe, in order to give their own exemption from them. One of the worst of these is cowardice, which, though often an voluntary defect of constitution, is justly reckoned a crime in military men, from the consequences that may attend it, and as it makes them unable to perform the duties of a profession which they should not have

entered into under a sense of such incapacity. All the captains present were for punishing the offender instantly, in the most exemplary manner, for so flagrant a breach of duty. But my master, much as he detested the crime, and was provoked at the insolence with which he strove to carry it off, thought it better to overlook it for the present, than by bringing him to justice, throw a disgrace upon the forces, that might encourage the enemy to exert themselves, in hopes of more instances of the kind. But this moderation was disappointed by a common cause. In a few days after, the captain judging by himself, that nothing but fear of giving offence to his great family could have prevented his being fallen upon directly (for, notwithstanding his evasions, he was conscious of his crime) instead of improving that precious respite, to extenuate his guilt by some meritorious action, presumed, upon meeting some instances of contempt from the rest of his corps, to demand the justification of a public trial, in order to be formally acquitted of what he thought they dared not to convict him; and also to escape being involved in any further dangers during the expedition, as he knew the immediate consequence of such a demand must necessarily be suspending him from his command till he should be tried, which he knew could not be before the conclusion of the siege; and in this latter particular his expectation was not deceived.

This directly put an end to the prudential reasons that had hitherto saved him, and of which the successful progress of the siege had also greatly lessened the force. Accordingly, to end his story here in a few words, the trial he desired was granted, the result of which was that he was broke with infamy, in contempt of all his boasts and menaces of the power and resentment of his family and friends.

CHAPTER XLIX.

Chrysal accounts for the peculiar animosities which some nations shew in war. A noble Spaniard is taken prisoner in a sally. He makes a proposal to the general, which is accepted, and opens a prospect of peace. A brutal outrage disappoints his design, and embroils matters more than ever.

THERE is nothing suggests so disadvantageous an idea of mankind as the more than brutal ferocity with which they destroy each other, when quarrels between nations set the animosity of individuals free from those restraints of law with which necessity has taught human prudence to enforce the observation of the general duties of social and moral life.

This animosity, though, is never seen in its most sanguine colours, but in wars between people of different modes of religion. In that revelation of the will of heaven, which should be the rule of the religion of Christians, the first precept in respect to the mutual intercourse between man and man, is brotherly love to each other. Such a precept bears intrinsic evidence of its divine origin. But still human perversion has dared to represent the breach of it as a duty of that revealed law, by confining the benefit of the obligation to the profession of some particular opinions, and not only excluding the rest

of mankind from the circle of the general brotherhood, but also making it a merit to propagate those opinions, by the extirpation of all dissenting from them, who are held incapable of the favour of heaven, and therefore not entitled to the common rights of humanity.

Of all the people who profess christianity, the Spaniards are the most bigoted slaves to this narrow and gross prejudice. With them, therefore, the natural animosity of war is heightened, by religious abhorrence, against all who differ in opinion from them : and the laws which more enlightened nations have mutually agreed in, to restrain its ravages, and facilitate the restitution of peace, are often broken through, with a cruelty disgraceful to the name of man.

In a sally made one night by the besieged, a noble Spaniard, who had penetrated so far into the trenches that it was impossible for him to get back, fell wounded into the hands of the English. The gallantry with which he had defended himself gained him respect from his enemies ; and he was treated with that generous tenderness which brave men feel for each other.

Struck with a behaviour so different from what he expected, for he had been taught to look upon the English as enemies to mankind, and delighting in the most savage cruelty, he desired to be led to the commander, to whom, he said, he had something of consequence to propose. Accordingly, as soon as his wounds were dressed, he was conducted to the general, with whom my master happened to be, and advancing to him with an air of dignity, ‘ I am ‘ come, illustrious chief,’ said he, ‘ to thank you for ‘ the humane and generous treatment I have received ‘ from your brave soldiers, which, if known to my

‘countrymen, would facilitate an accommodation between them and you, as dread of your power, raised, I am now convinced, by injurious misrepresentations, has hitherto principally prevented their listening to any terms from you. I speak not this from ignorance. My father is governor of the city. If you will let him know that I am your captive, he will directly pay for me whatever ransom you desire, and, on my return, I will faithfully remove the prejudices which keep up their animosity against you, and by that means open the way to a reconciliation, till the pleasure of our sovereigns shall restore peace to their subjects.’

Such an offer required no arguments to enforce it. ‘The English,’ answered the general, ‘never abuse the advantages they obtain in war. I desire no ransom for your liberty; you are free to return to your father when you please; and if you can be the means of preventing the effusion of more blood, as you must be convinced that resistance is in vain, I shall think myself happy in having an opportunity to shew respect to all whom you shall recommend as your friends, and deserving of it.’

These words filled the benevolent heart of the Spaniard with joy, ‘I fly,’ replied he eagerly, ‘to execute a commission, in which there can be no difficulty. As you are brave, and faithful to your sovereign, you will require no terms which brave men and good subjects ought not to comply with.’

The general then prevailed upon him to take some refreshment, after which he and my master went with him to the head of the lines, where he dismissed him with every mark of respect, attended by an officer with a *flag of truce*, to bring back the

governor's answer. But this pleasing prospect was soon overcast. The officer and he had not advanced half the way between the trenches and the town, when they were fired upon by a party of Spaniards, who lay in ambush among the ruins of some old buildings. At the first sound of their fire, the Spaniard rushed forward, in order to put a stop to it, and the officer waved his flag of truce over his head, but that sacred ensign afforded him no protection. They repeated their shot, and seeing him fall, ran up, and, in despite of all the Spaniard could do, who received a mortal wound as he covered his body with his own, butchered him in the most barbarous manner, replying to his appeal to the law of nations, violated thus in him, that *heretics were excluded from the benefit of all laws.*

The indignation with which such an outrage fired the English forces is not to be described. They vowed to exterminate a people who were unworthy to live; and in the first madness of their rage were with difficulty restrained from attempting to storm the walls, before a breach should give them even a possibility of success.

The leaders did not fail to improve such a spirit.—Every thing was pushed on with redoubled vigour; and war became more horrible, when blackened with a passion for revenge, which had taken possession of the men, that it was some time before all the endeavours of their officers could put a stop to their indulging it, and bring them back to that generous valour which is their peculiar glory.

CHAPTER L.

Chrysal's attention is agreeably diverted by the appearance of a young Spaniard, who throws himself at the feet of his master to prefer an extraordinary request. The history of Don Alphonso Guzman, the young Spaniard.

I WAS relieved from the pain of attending to such scenes of horror, by an affair that shewed, in a striking light, the force of passions more natural to the heart of man.

As my master, who, active as light, was every where, and joined in every thing, was standing one night to see the effect of a battery that commanded a particular quarter of the town, a youth, who had made his escape from the garrison, and advanced in the face of all their fire, though sufficient to terrify any being capable of terror, threw himself at his feet, in agonies of distress. My master, whose heart was warmed with that generous compassion which is inseparable from true courage, was struck at the sight, and, raising him from the ground, bade him declare the nature of his distress, and expect every assistance to which he was entitled by the sacred duties of humanity. Encouraged by these words, the youth raised his head, and fixing his eyes upon my master, with a look inexpressibly supplicating, 'Oh! stop your fire, gracious chief!' said he, pressing his lips

passionately to the hand that had raised him, and on which he still hung, 'stop your fire in that fatal direction, where it can hurt only innocence and virtue. That building against which it is levelled is not a part of the fortifications, the destruction of which can be of any service to you. It is a convent dedicated to the *Virgin Mother of God*, and at this time contains all that my soul holds dear, all that is beautiful and virtuous under heaven.'

Though his youth, beauty, and distress, interested every one present in the suppliant's favour, the nature of his suit must necessarily have prevented its success. But an accident saved him from the pain of being refused; the powder which was to serve the guns somehow catching fire, and destroying the greatest part of the battery, in the very instant he spoke. Not all the horrors of such a scene could suppress the joy he felt at an event so favourable to his hopes. 'Heaven has interfered!' exclaimed he, in an ecstasy. 'Heaven has interfered to save her; and man will not presume to oppose its pleasure.'

The enthusiastic manner in which he said this struck my master. 'Restrain your passions for a few moments,' said he, 'till I have leisure to attend more particularly to you; and then, if you can convince me of the truth of what you say, your request shall be complied with. Far be it from me to hurt those helpless votaries of religion. Britons seek other objects for their valour.' He then gave the necessary orders for repairing the battery, and, desiring the youth to follow him, went on board his ship, where he treated him with every mark of politeness and compassion. As soon as they had taken some refreshment, my master made a sign to every one else to retire; and then addressing himself to the

youth in the most humane manner, desired to know who he was, and what motives could have induced him to run into such imminent danger, in order to prefer a suit, of the success of which there was so little probability.

The youth for some moments hung down his head abashed, then with a sigh that seemed to burst his heart, 'It is my duty, most generous chief,' said he, 'to give you the information you require, however painful the task may be to me; especially as your condescending to listen to the story of my misfortunes awakes a hope, that you will be moved by them to grant a request on which depends my life. My name is Alphonso. My father, Don Pedro, bears an honourable command in the forces which defend yonder city against your arms, but glories more in the honour of being descended from the noble family of Guzman, which has preserved its blood pure from every debasing mixture, since the beginning of time, in the mountains of Castile, and produced a race of heroes, whose fame has filled the world. When my father arrived at an age fit to bear arms, as none of the powers of Europe dared to provoke the wrath of Spain, disdaining a life of inglorious peace, he entered into the forces sent hither to reduce such of the rebellious natives as still presumed to refuse submission to the monarch of the Spanish worlds, where he signalized himself so eminently, that at the end of seven years his merits were rewarded with a commission, signed by the viceroy himself, in the name of the king. Such a distinguished honour gave weight to the addresses which he had for some time paid to the only daughter of Don Alonzo Garzias, who was a native of Arragon, and had been sent over by the king to fill the important office of secretary to the receiver

‘ of his revenues. From this marriage, so honour-
‘ able to both parties, I have the happiness to derive
‘ my birth, if it can be called an happiness to be born
‘ only to misfortunes.

‘ As I was the sole hope of two such illustrious
‘ houses, no pains were spared to give me an educa-
‘ tion suitable to my birth; the great exploits of my
‘ ancestors, the antiquity and untainted nobility of
‘ my blood, were continually repeated to me, to excite
‘ emulation, and inspire me with proper sentiments of
‘ honour. Such care seemed the surest means to
‘ procure happiness, but the wisdom of man strives
‘ in vain against the decrees of fate.

‘ In the neighbourhood of my father’s house there
‘ lived a merchant, named Don Antonio, between
‘ whose family and ours there was the closest inti-
‘ macy—an intimacy mutually advantageous; the
‘ countenance of a person of my father’s consequence
‘ being an honour to his friend, who never omitted
‘ those returns of gratitude, which his wealth often
‘ gave him an opportunity of making. Don Antonio
‘ had an only daughter, whose being heiress to his
‘ great fortune was the least blessing heaven had
‘ bestowed upon her! O! my Olivia, shall I ever
‘ behold you more? May I yet raise my hopes so
‘ high as to think of calling you mine?—

At these words a flood of tears choaking his ut-
terance, my master took the opportunity to go out,
and give some orders to his officers; and on his
return the youth proceeded.

‘ Don Antonio’s daughter and I being nearly of
‘ the same age, the tender connexion of infant fond-
‘ ness grew up between us, and improved with our

‘ ripening years. The attention of my father was
‘ too much engrossed by his military cares to take
‘ notice of our attachment, and my mother was so
‘ sensible of the many perfections of Olivia, that far
‘ from discouraging, she promoted it by every means
‘ in her power, dwelling continually on her praises,
‘ and suggesting to me such little offices of affection
‘ and respect as were suited to our ages, and most
‘ likely to make an impression on her tender heart.
‘ Nor did the father of Olivia (she had lost her mother
‘ in her infancy) shew any dissatisfaction at a passion
‘ which could not escape his notice; influenced most
‘ probably by a sense of the honour which he should
‘ derive from such an alliance.

‘ In this happy state we lived till I entered on my
‘ fifteenth year, when my father thought it proper for
‘ me to learn the art of war, in order to qualify me
‘ for such military promotions as I was entitled to
‘ by my birth, and for that purpose gave me notice to
‘ prepare myself to march with some troops, which
‘ were going to reinforce a garrison in the most distant
‘ part of the kingdom. Though my heart glowed with
‘ all the ambition and desire of glory which my noble
‘ blood must naturally inspire, the thought of being
‘ separated from Olivia overbalanced every other con-
‘ sideration. In the first emotions of my soul, there-
‘ fore, I threw myself at my father’s feet, and rashly
‘ owned my passion, imploring him, as he regarded
‘ my life, to make me happy in the possession of my
‘ love, before he attempted parting us, even for a
‘ moment. It is impossible to describe his rage on
‘ this unhappy discovery. Spurning me from him
‘ with his foot, “ Degenerate wretch !” said he,
‘ when his wrath permitted him to speak, “ Degene-
‘ rate wretch ! to stain the honour of your blood, by
‘ thinking of an alliance with the daughter of a person

‘ of whose family you have no knowledge !’—(For,
‘ in all the intercourse of intimacy, the father of Olivia
‘ had never discovered in what part of Spain he had
‘ been born ; nor could the recital of illustrious pe-
‘ digrees, the constant topic of discourse among the
‘ noble, ever incite him to an emulative mention of
‘ his own.)—“ Hence ! Fly my sight this moment ;
‘ nor ever presume to appear before me again, till you
‘ have conquered this disgraceful passion.”—

‘ I knew the inflexibility of my father’s temper too
‘ well to attempt making any reply, even would the
‘ fulness of my heart have permitted me. I retired,
‘ therefore, without speaking a word, and going to
‘ my mother, informed her of my distress, which she
‘ strove to alleviate by every expression of tender-
‘ ness and consolation, promising to exert all her
‘ influence, as soon as the first heat of his wrath
‘ should be allayed, to prevail upon him to consent
‘ to my suit.

CHAPTER LI.

Continued. Olivia's father is taken up by the Inquisition, and herself put into a convent, on an English battery's firing upon which; Don Alphonso comes in despair to Chrystal's master to make a very odd request, which he grants at length, and also promises him his assistance to obtain his mistress.

‘THOUGH I received some encouragement from these assurances, I could not forbear going, in the boding of my heart, to acquaint Olivia with what had happened, but in the most delicate terms. Her affliction was not less than mine. She saw the sincerity of my love, and in the tenderness of such a scene yielded to my entreaties, and plighted her faith to me by the most sacred vows. Comforted by the thought that she could not now be torn from me, I returned home, where I found my mother fulfilling her promise, and pleading with my father in my behalf. As their earnestness made them speak aloud, I could not resist the natural desire of listening to a debate of such importance to my hopes. She urged, with all the strength of reason, the absurdity of thinking a family dishonoured by the admission of a female, and enforced her arguments with the examples even of sovereigns; she insisted on the beauty, virtues, and fortune of Olivia, which made her worthy of the most honourable alliance; and concluded with saying, how much better it would

' be for us all to have me married to a person
' whose wealth would enable us to spend the re-
' mainder of our lives in plenty and happiness, than
' to continue struggling with every misery of poverty,
' merely to indulge a false, ill-grounded pride.

' My father had listened to the former part of what
' she said with an appearance of attention ; but the
' moment she mentioned his poverty he lost all
' patience. " Forbear, mean, mercenary woman !"
' said he, stamping his foot upon the ground with a
' violence that shook the house, " forbear to tempt
' my wrath by such base insinuations. Did ever a
' Castilian think poverty an hardship, or put riches in
' competition with his honour ? Such sentiments may
' suit an Arragonian, but are beneath me. I see the
' source of the wretch's degeneracy ! My blood never
' could have stooped to such meanness, had it not
' been mixed with your's." Saying this, he flung
' out of the room, and finding me at the door, " Mark
' me, thou disgrace to my blood !" said he, with a look
' that appalled my soul. " If ever I hear more of this
' affair, I swear by the offended honour of all my
' ancestors to, sacrifice every one concerned in my
' being offered such an affront."

' What I felt on hearing this dreadful denunciation
' may be easily conceived. I swooned away, nor
' recovered my senses till several hours after, when
' I found my mother weeping over me, in the bitter-
' ness of resentment and grief. As soon as she
' perceived that I was come to myself, she strove to
' comfort me by repeating her former promises, to the
' accomplishment of which she was now further im-
' pelled by her resentment of the reflections which
' my father had thrown upon her country. But an
' unforeseen misfortune blasted all our hopes before

‘ she had time to make another effort. The father of
‘ Olivia having had occasion to go to England on
‘ some affairs in the course of his extensive dealings,
‘ was so taken with the people of that country, that,
‘ after his return, he never omitted any opportunity of
‘ vindicating them from the injurious aspersions of
‘ those who spoke only from prejudice, and without
‘ proper information. This attachment naturally
‘ raised the jealousy of the clergy; but as he con-
‘ fined his approbation merely to their moral and
‘ social virtues, without ever saying a word in vindi-
‘ cation of their religious tenets, they contented them-
‘ selves with cautioning him against misplacing his
‘ praise, and telling him, *that there could be no virtue*
‘ *where the true faith was not; and therefore those*
‘ *actions, with which he was dazzled, were no more*
‘ *than shining sins*: and they were thus mild in their
‘ reprehension, as he was remarkably punctual in the
‘ professions and practice of all the rites and doc-
‘ trines prescribed by the holy church. But this
‘ lenity lasted not long. On the breaking out of the
‘ present war with England, some persons, who
‘ envied the success with which his honest industry
‘ had been rewarded, raised a suspicion in the go-
‘ vernor of his holding an improper correspondence
‘ with the enemy, to which his former regard for them
‘ seemed to give an appearance of probability.

‘ Bold in conscious innocence, he denied the
‘ charge, nor could the strictest inquiry procure the
‘ least proof of it: but in the course of their search
‘ a discovery was unhappily made that involved him
‘ in ruin, if possible, more dreadful: a number of
‘ books, containing opinions contrary to the catholic
‘ faith, being found in his possession, concealed
‘ among some of his goods. In vain did he alledge
‘ that they belonged not to, nor could possibly have

' been known of by him, the goods among which
' they had been concealed having been landed but
' a few days before out of an English ship, which
' had been taken by a Spanish man of war, in her
' passage to one of their own colonies, where such
' books were openly allowed of, and sold to him
' unopened, as they still remained. But evident as
' the truth of this was, *the Holy Office*, to whose
' jurisdiction the affair belonged, would not admit
' of any such excuse. They instantly seized the
' unhappy man, and hurrying him away to their own
' prison, took possession of all his wealth, and
' forced his helpless daughter into yonder convent.
' This misfortune, which deprived me of the wretch's
' poorest consolation, the liberty of complaining,
' drove me to despair. I pined in silence; and was
' beginning to meditate on laying down a life that
' was become a burthen to me, when my father
' calling me to him one morning "the time is come!"
' said he, smiling fiercely, "that will prove the
' blood of Guzman. The evil genius of the English
' has prompted them to come, and seek their deaths
' here. The most noble governor has not only pro-
' moted me this day to the command of a company
' in the forces destined for the defence of this city,
' but also, in respect to my family, has appointed
' you to be my lieutenant. Let this arouse you to a
' sense of yourself! consider, what you owe to your
' country, and to your name! Every feeble passion
' flies at the manly voice of war."

' Languid as my soul was, I could not bear this
' news without joy, especially as it opened me a
' prospect of meeting honourably that death, which
' was now my only hope. Accordingly, as soon as
' the enemy appeared, I courted danger with such
' eagerness, that my father, in spite of all his mag-

nanimity, more than once desired me to restrain a courage that arose to an excess. But even death itself is deaf to the wretch's call. Nothing material happened to me, till the battery, to which I came to you, opened upon the convent, when the thought of my Olivia's danger of being buried in its ruins drove me to madness. I instantly flew thither, and, imagining that such circumstances bore down all regard to rules calculated for times of peace, demanded entrance to convey the inhabitants to some place of safety: but what was my astonishment to hear the governor had given the strictest orders, that not a soul should be admitted to stir, committing to the immediate hand of heaven the protection of its peculiar votaries.

‘ Such inhumanity, for I can call it by no milder name, broke every bond of duty and allegiance. I abjured all further connexion with so cruelly insensible a monster; and recollecting the many exalted instances of generosity which the unhappy father of Olivia had told me of the English, I resolved to apply myself to them, and try whether I could not obtain that safety for the beloved of my soul, which I could not hope from him whose duty it was to protect her

‘ This, most illustrious chief, is the story of my misfortunes; the cause of that conduct which appeared so strange to you. If you grant my suit, you will be amply rewarded by the conscious approbation of your own mind. You will merit the blessing of heaven on your undertakings, by sparing the most perfect of its works! And may I presume to add! you will attach to you an heart that is incapable of deceit! Through every vicis-

‘sititude of life will I attend your steps, the faithful
‘servant of your fate.’

The brightness of truth breaks through every cloud, and forces conviction. ‘I grant your request,’ said my master with a smile of consolation and encouragement, ‘the convent shall be spared. Nor is that all. If success crowns my hopes, I will also use every means in my power to restore your Olivia to your arms.’

CHAPTER LII.

The fortunate effects of Chrysal's master's sparing the convent. The mutual advantage, to victors and vanquished, of articles of capitulation. Chrysal's master performs his promise to Alphonso, into whose service Chrysal enters. Alphonso recovers his mistress, whose father is set at liberty by a piece of fun of some English sailors. Conclusion of the story of Alphonso. Chrysal changes his service.

ACCORDINGLY to his promise, the next night, when the battery was repaired, my master gave orders to direct the fire another way, where he soon found the reward of his generosity, one of the first bombs which was thrown setting fire to the principal magazine in the whole city, the blowing up of which overturned a considerable part of the fortifications. Animated by this success to a degree of phrenzy, the besiegers pushed on their attacks with such irresistible fury, that, in spite of the accumulated havoc

of war, disease, and want, they at length overcame the obstinacy of the besieged, and compelled them to capitulate on terms which were readily agreed to on both sides, *as they saved the plunder from the soldiers, for the victorious commanders*; at the same time that they protected the persons of the vanquished from licentious outrage.

There is no instance in which the customs of mankind are more changed than this. Formerly, when nations waged war, every thing the victorious soldier could lay hold on was his own, the persons as well as the property of the vanquished; and this more especially at the taking of a town, which was the harvest of his hopes. The excesses committed on these occasions most certainly required a remedy; but it were well if that remedy, as in other cases, had not been abused; and the care of restraining the excess of the common soldiers made a pretext for depriving them of the reward of all their toils and dangers, to enrich their commanders. The injustice of making slaves of the people, for the ambition or avarice of their prince, is so flagrant, that the practice has been universally discontinued among civilized nations, who also affect to shew moderation in stripping them of their property, particularly in this instance of towns taken by capitulation. But at whose expense is this moderation? Why, at that of the inferior officers and soldiers, who receive a pittance, of their own earnings that only insults their necessities, while the bulk is shared between their superiors. The injustice of this is evident. Either all such composition should be abolished entirely, and the property as well as liberty of the vanquished be preserved to them, or the prize be more equitably divided with those from whom the plunder is taken, who struggle with distress, and brave death for a morsel of bread, without any

more hope of mending their condition even by success, than the ox has of eating the corn for which he labours to plough the ground : and this loss of hope is the reason why soldiers are not animated with the same ardour now as in former days. But, grating as so flagrant a partiality must be to a generous mind, there is one circumstance, not obvious perhaps to you, that aggravates the pain of it still higher : this is, the necessity which the sufferers are under of submitting to the *insolence and extortions of a set of clerks and agents* who fatten on their spoils, without even pretending to any merit in the acquisition : a reflection that exasperates them against their commanders, by whose favour those wretches are introduced and supported, and on whom they father all their villainies.

Much as the cares of his situation engrossed the attention of my master, he did not forget his promise to the Spanish youth, but, ordering him a guard of soldiers, bade him go, as soon as the gates should be delivered up, and secure the convent where his Olivia was confined from any accident which might happen on such an occasion in spite of all their care, giving him at the same time a purse of gold, in which I was, to answer any present necessities, with directions to apply to him again, if he should have any further need of his assistance.

My new master did not want to have such a commission repeated. He kissed the hand of his benefactor in a rapture of gratitude, and encouraging the guard assigned him with the most liberal promises, flew, the moment the gates of the city were opened, to the convent, and demanded his Olivia with the peremptory voice of a conqueror, where the sight of the guard removed every objection, and she was instantly delivered to him. The meeting of these

young lovers was most affecting. They flew into each other's arms, and embracing in ecstasy too big for utterance, gave vent to the fulness of their hearts by a flood of tears. Recovering himself at length, 'Come, my Olivia,' said Alphonso, taking her hand, 'let us leave this place. Let us go.'—'O whither,' interrupted she, starting wildly, 'whither shall I go? 'I have no home—no father to receive me.'—'My home is your's' answered Alphonso, embracing her most tenderly, 'we will go to the house of my father, who cannot persist in his cruelty, when he is informed how signally heaven has interfered in our favour, and there we will consult on the means proper for procuring the deliverance of Antonio, 'I have a protector among the conquerors, the most generous of mankind, who will not refuse his assistance on such an occasion.

These words comforted Olivia with an hope, for the accomplishment of which though she was indebted to another cause. The way from the convent to the house of Alphonso's father leading them by the prison of the inquisition, Olivia was so affected at the sight of it, that she swooned away in the arms of Alphonso. Such an accident naturally threw the whole company into an embarrassment; while they were in the midst of which, a body of English seamen, who had slipped away from their officers, and were roving about merely from curiosity, and without intention of doing mischief, but ready to join in any that should fall in their way, happening to come by, no sooner understood from the guard what was the matter, than looking at each other for some moments, as if waiting for the word of command, at length one of them cried out, 'Halloo, boys! What say you? Shall we bail the gentleman's father? May-hap there may be some of

our countrymen in the bilboes along with him! 'Damn my eyes and limbs, but it would be good fun to set them all free! I fancy the inquisitors will not refuse our bail; if they do I should be glad to pick a quarrel with them: I hate them mortally ever since I saw them roast some poor Smouches at Lisbon because they would not eat work. Come! cheer away, my hearts of oak! All hands aloft, and to work.'

These words were like fire given to a mine. He had scarce finished, when the thoughtless creatures without more ado ran to the prison, and, while some of them were forcing in the gates, the rest, mounting on each other's shoulders, climbed over the walls. The moment Olivia, now recovered from her swoon, saw the prison open, 'now is the time, Alphonso!' said she. 'Now is the time to set my father free.'

The hint was sufficient. Alphonso turned directly to the guard, and perceiving by their looks that they were willing to assist him, 'I go, my love!' said he. 'But where shall I leave you in safety till I return?' 'Such a place cannot be fit for your delicacy.'—'Speak not of leaving me!' interrupted she eagerly. 'I will go with you! No delicacy shall interfere with such a duty.'—On her saying this, they all entered the prison, where the seamen were shouting and skipping about like so many wild creatures, and setting all the prisoners at liberty, wherever they went. The secrets of this prison-house are too horrid for description. I shall, therefore, draw veil over them at this time, especially as another occasion will lead me into the same scenes again, when the representation will be more interesting. No words can convey an idea of the tenderness of the meeting between Olivia and her father, whom





ADVENTURES OF A GUINEA.

The joyful meeting of Olivia & her Father,

and she readily found out. As soon as they had indulged the first transports of their joy, she informed him briefly how much they were both indebted to Alphonso for their present happiness. Though her father was not at a loss for the motive of such generosity, he thought it not proper to take notice of it at that time. He embraced him tenderly, and besought heaven to reward his virtues.

‘The happiness of serving those most dear to us,’ said Alphonso, who had not the same command of his temper, ‘is its own reward. Olivia and her father have a right to every thing in my power. But, let us leave this place, the sight of which appals my soul. Let us go to the house of my father.’—‘Lead on, my children!’ answered Olivia’s father, ‘I follow willingly; and not without hope of reconciling my friend to our general happiness.’

When they went out of the prison they found the sailors employed in executing a piece of justice exactly in their character. They had rambled all through the prison, without doing or designing mischief, till they came to the chamber in which were kept the instruments of torture, the sight of which incensed them to such a degree, that they instantly resolved to make the inquisitors themselves feel the force of them in their turn; but they, apprehensive of what might happen, had prudently made their escape by a secret passage, as soon as the prison had been forced. Disappointed thus in their design, the sailors took all the horrid apparatus, with all the habits, ensigns, books, &c. of the office, and piling them up in the court, set fire to the heap, concluding the exploit with three cheers for the honour of Old England; after which they marched off in quest of mere fun, as unconcerned as if nothing had happened.

When Alphonso arrived at his father's house, he found his mother just sinking under the weight of affliction. On hearing his voice, she started up, and running to him, 'O my son! my son!' exclaimed she, clasping him in her arms, and leaning her head upon his bosom, 'Heaven has heard my prayers! I am not childless, though I am a widow!' 'A widow;' exclaimed Alphonso. 'Forbid it heaven! O my father!' 'Yes, Alphonso!' continued she, raising her head from his bosom, which she had bedewed with tears. 'Your father died, as he lived, with honour, fighting valiantly by the side of his general, in defence of his country. But what do I see?' casting her eyes upon Olivia, her father, and the guard, whom her surprise had prevented her taking notice of before. 'Olivia! Antonio!—And who are these strange men?—But, alas, I know too well!—O! my son, art thou then a prisoner to the enemies who slew thy father! Am I to lose thee again, the moment thou art returned?' 'No, my mother!' answered he, 'I am no prisoner! They are our protectors, given by the most generous of men, who has thus restored us to each other! O! that my father were alive, to make our happiness complete.' 'Since heaven has appointed otherwise,' said Antonio, going up to Alphonso's mother, who was weeping with Olivia, on whose neck she had fallen, 'it is our duty to submit to its pleasure. The circumstances of our lives make it improper for us to think of living any longer here. But that should not discourage us. The virtuous find an home every where! We will remove to the dominions of the English, where I have lodged in honest hands fortune sufficient to make our retreat happy. Under the protection of their laws, a man's mind is at liberty, and his wealth is secure. Mine was my only crime here; but I was aware

‘ of such an attack, and had removed it beyond the
‘ reach of those who impiously made religion the
‘ pretext for depriving me of it. Were my friend
‘ Don Pedro living, I would have removed the ob-
‘ jections which his high notions of honour made to
‘ an alliance with my family, and prevailed upon
‘ him to accompany us.’ These words comforted the
‘ mother of Alphonso, and made the lovers happy.

Every thing being thus settled, the guard was dismissed with professions of the highest gratitude to the generous chief, which Antonio and Alphonso proposed waiting on him to pay in person, as soon as he should be more at leisure; and to reward the soldiers for their attendance, Alphonso gave them the purse of gold he had received from his benefactor, and in which I was, in the division of which I fell to the lot of the serjeant who commanded them, who, looking upon me as an earnest of the vast treasures he was to receive as his share of the spoil, went away with a happy heart, to join his fellows, who were now in full possession of the city.

CHAPTER LIII.

Chrysal makes some striking remarks on a state of absolute liberty. Disappointment of the hopes of the conquerors, with the natural consequences. Chrysal's master going to take a taste of the pleasures of affluence, is flamm'd out of his treasure by a sutler, into whose service Chrysal enters.

THE conduct of man in such scenes as this, where he thinks himself at liberty to follow the instantaneous impulse of his own will, without apprehension of immediate punishment, shews the groundless vanity of those, who boast so loudly of the excellency of his nature, and deny the necessity of coercive laws. It is true, no people ever abused this liberty less than the English, who scorn to inflict upon others that oppression from which their laws protect themselves; as, on the other hand, slaves, on a change of fortune, always prove the most imperious tyrants; but still the circumstances attending even the most moderate exertion of it are too shocking for dispassionate description, wherefore I shall wave the painful task.

As soon as some degree of order was established in the city, the victorious commanders proceeded to divide the spoil, a work for which they all shew'd their capacity in the most remarkable manner, the pittance which they thought proper to appoint for the share of each of the private men, who had

literally borne the heat and burthen of the day being a trifle beneath the acceptance of any but a beggar who wanted a morsel of bread, and not *the fifty-thousandth part* of what the chief commanders, who comparatively had lived in luxury, and issued their orders from places of safety, modestly owned to have reserved for each of themselves. Nor was the case of the inferior officers, who executed those orders, any better, their shares not being sufficient to defray the extraordinary expenses which they had been at, to provide for the enterprize, much less the extraordinary expense of living, where the indispensable necessities of life were subject to the most exorbitant impositions of an avaricious and arbitrary will; so that all they gained by their conquest was to exchange the dangers of war for the miseries of want.

This disappointment of the hopes which alone had supported their spirits through hardships almost beyond the power of nature to support, filled up the black list of the calamities which attended this enterprise, aggravating by despair the diseases to which the climate subjected the victors to such a degree, that their loss, after their conquest, exceeded many times that which they had suffered in the siege from so many combined causes.

To the truth of this representation, which so unexperienced speculation may appear too severely drawn, the wretched remains of the conquering army which returned to their exhausted country bore a melancholy testimony.—But to quit these disagreeable reflections!

Such a treasure as I was (greater much than he had ever been possessed of before) raised the spirits of my master, the serjeant, so high, that he went

directly to a sutler's tent, to take a taste of the good living which he thought himself secure of for the remainder of his days. On his entering the tent, and asking what entertainment he could have, the sutler, ignorant of his wealth, answered with a curse that he had none for such shabby fellows as he, and took him by the shoulders to thrust him out. Provoked at such an indignity to a person of his present consequence, my master turned upon him, and pulling me out of his pocket, demanded haughtily, why he might not have what he would pay for, as well as another. The sight of the gold instantly changed the sutler's whole behaviour. 'My worthy friend!' said he, shaking the serjeant by the hand. 'I beg your pardon. I actually did not perceive whom I spoke to, I am so hurried about. But, come along with me, and I'll make you amends. I have a nice leg of a fowl which was bespoke for your colonel; but *first come first served*, as the saying is, so here it is for you; and here is a bottle of wine, as cool as if it came but this minute from Iceland.'

My master was not proof against such an invitation. He *fell to*, without more ceremony, and when he had finished his feast, calling to know what was to pay, the sutler answered, 'Two guineas.' 'Two guineas!—two devils!' said the serjeant staring at such a demand, 'for a leg of an old hen, as black as hell, and lean as Belzebub, and a bottle of rot-gut sour cyder! No, no, friend! no such tricks for me. I am not to be *flammed* so neither.' 'Why, there it is now!' answered the sutler, not much pleased with my master's looks. 'The moment a man grows rich, he grows covetous. I received the same for the other leg of that fowl, this moment, from an ensign who by the same token left his laced

‘waistcoat in pawn for half the money. But I will not fall out with you for such a trifle, as I expect more of your custom; so even give me what you please. You cannot think one guinea too much, I am sure! but you shall make it up another time.’

Such an argument could not be resited. The serjeant threw me down upon the table with an air of grandeur, and went to consider how he should lay out to the best advantage, the treasures which he expected immediately to receive.

CHAPTER LIV.

Character of Chrysal's new master. The right way not to suffer by making mistakes. A curious conversation between Chrysal's master and two persons of consequence lays open the secrets of some interesting affairs. He makes up a foolish dispute by a sensible toast.

I WAS now entered into a service, which opened to me so many various views of human folly, vice, and wretchedness, as made the prospect painful. The manner in which my new master got me into his possession shewed his character in a light sufficiently strong. But I soon had the satisfaction of seeing that, with all his address at imposition, he was himself no more than the tool of the impositions of his superiors, who scarce left him the poorest gleanings to pick up, after all the plenteous harvest; the just

and constant fate of all such wretches. The continual hurry in which he was engaged, though he had falsely alledged it as an excuse for the treatment of my late master, the serjeant, was really sufficient to excuse any inadvertency or blunder, and must have caused many in any one, whose ideas were not settled in one certain course, out of which it was impossible to divert them. But I soon found, that he was in no danger of that kind, all his thoughts having such an invariable bias to his own interest, that every mistake naturally fell to that side, for which upon detection his hurry was a ready and probable excuse.

The serjeant had scarce left him, when two persons entered, whom he received with every mark of the most obsequious ceremony and respect. One of them I directly knew to be my old master, the admiral's clerk, as I soon found the other to be in the same important station with the general. My master, who was not at a loss for the occasion of their visit, led them into the most private place in the tent, and setting before them a bottle of his best, proceeded to business. 'Mr. Admiral, to your good health! Mr. General, my very hearty service to you!' said he, filling a brimmer, and addressing each, by the title of his master, as he shook them by the hand. 'Here is a good conclusion to the campaign to us. I was impatient for your coming to know how I should go on. Here have been several officers with me already, for credit on the score of their prize-money, for the length of the siege, and the dearth of every thing, has not left them a penny, nor any thing to pawn for one. I have got as many clothes, and things of all kinds, as would serve to set up a Monmouth-street merchant. If the place had held out but a few days longer, the poor devils must have done duty in their buff. Ha! ha! ha!'—'And the

‘properest dress for them:’ returned the admiral. ‘Who wants any clothes in such a climate as this? I am sure I go naked half my time, though I keep under cover, and have nothing to do to heat me.’—‘Very true!’ answered my master. ‘But naked and hungry both are not quite so well; and when their moveables were all gone after their money, I don’t know who would have supplied them.’—‘Then let them live on their allowance?’ said the general. ‘They who can’t afford to pay for better should be content with that.’—‘To die upon it, you should say;’ interrupted my master. ‘I am sure the stores laid in are such as no one can live upon, that has ever known what living was. For my part, I wonder the contractors were not ashamed to supply such wretched stuff of all kinds. They must have no conscience at all who can do such things.’—‘Conscience! ha! ha! ha! who ever heard a sutler speak of conscience before?’ said the admiral. ‘And pray, my conscientious friend, what do you charge a bottle for this most excellent wine of your’s?’

‘For this wine?’ answered my master, palating it two or three times. ‘I charge for this wine only a pistole; and, let me tell you, that is not so much, considering every thing. This Burgundy cost me five shillings a bottle, prime cost; and, when you compute every expense, you’ll find that my profit is nothing at all in comparison of what others get.’ ‘No! to be sure,’ replied the general. ‘Your conscience won’t suffer you to do as they do! you are too good a man.’ ‘Too good a Christian, you should say;’ interrupted the admiral; ‘as appears by your baptizing your wine so piously! ha! ha! ha! Pray, what did the water cost, that is mixed

‘with this same Burgundy? I hope that did not stand you in five shillings a bottle too. Ha! ha! ha!’ ‘It is very well, gentlemen!’ returned my master, with a sneer. ‘You are pleased to be merry. But if I had not some way to make out matters, I could never pay the exorbitant taxes which are squeezed from me by some people whom I shan’t name. And so, here’s my service to you both, once more! When you lower your composition, I’ll lessen the quantity of water, and mend mine. Ha! ha! ha!’—‘And so you had need,’ said the general, ‘to make it drinkable: as it is, I wonder it does not poison every one that tastes it. When I lived at the Shakespear, we did not give worse than this to our company after they were dead drunk!’—‘Worse than this!’ added the admiral. ‘If you had given me half so bad, I should have broken your head with the bottle.’—

‘Broken my head!’ returned the general, ‘fine words truly! When you were a blue-nosed journeyman barber, and used to come to me, to beg broken victuals, and bottoms of bottles, you spoke in another tone.’—‘And when I was sir,’ replied the admiral, ‘I had a good trade, and never looked upon myself as upon a level with the pimp of a tavern.’—‘And yet that pimping made you what you are now!’ retorted the general, rising up in a passion. ‘You forget, perhaps, how you begged of me to introduce your sister to the admiral, by which means you got into his service! this is a fine return, indeed.’—‘And you forget too,’ said the admiral, starting from his seat, and catching at the bottle, ‘that it was that same sister of mine, who got you into the general’s service, if you go to that, so that I think the obligation is equal.’—

‘Gentlemen! dear gentlemen!’ interrupted my master, clapping a hand to each of their collars. ‘Consider what you are doing! What will the world say of such a quarrel between gentlemen, who ought to agree like brothers. For shame! every body will laugh at you! Come, sit down, and be good friends, and I’ll try if I have not one bottle of better wine, over which we’ll make up all matters.’ Then bringing it, and filling his glass, ‘Come gentlemen,’ continued he, shaking each of them by the hand, ‘I’ll give you a toast that shall drown all animosity: here is prosperity to pimping! It is the best trade going, and has made us all! Aye, and is practised too by people in every station, however they may affect to turn up their noses at it. So let us attend to our business, and not fall together by the ears for nothing, like a parcel of dogs about a bare bone. It signifies nothing, what we have been; if we mind our hits now, we shall all be gentlemen, as good as the best of them; and as well respected too.’

The admiral and general saw the force of what he said, and, pledging his toast, shook hands, and were as good friends as ever.

CHAPTER LV.

Continued. The mysteries of agency; and convenience of a military government, with some curious motions of the genteeltest ways of rising in life.

‘WELL, gentlemen,’ said my master, who was not pleased at their jests upon his liquor, because he could not deny the truth of them, ‘I hope that wine ‘pleases you!’ ‘Aye!’ answered the admiral, ‘this ‘is the right sort! this is the thing. Give us this; ‘and keep the other for officers, and such as are ‘not used to better.’—‘And if it poisons them,’ added the admiral, ‘the public will have the fewer to ‘pay. Now they have done the business, let them ‘live or die as they can, we care not. That’s ‘nothing to us.’—‘Very true!’ said my master. ‘All we have to do, is to make the most of them ‘while they do live; and therefore I should be glad ‘to know, as I said before, how far I may venture ‘to go with them, on the credit of their prize-money; ‘for, as the place was saved from being plundered ‘by the articles of capitulation, they must all get ‘money on their shares, whether they will or not, ‘their necessities are such.’

‘So much the better for us, who can buy their ‘shares:’ answered the admiral. ‘Their necessity

‘is our gain.’—‘Aye!’ replied my master. ‘But I don’t find they intend selling. All they propose is, to mortgage.’—‘Then, let them see who’ll give them money:’ said the general. ‘No! no! no mortgages for us. An absolute sale or nothing. We’ll have no after-reckonings; no overhauling accounts. As to their being unwilling to sell, we’ll manage that matter with them. When you have got them sufficiently in your books, call for your money, and, as it will be impossible for them to pay, apply to the commander-in-chief, who will oblige them to do you justice.’—‘Why! to be sure, that must do!’ answered my master. ‘But how far am I to trust them!’—‘This will show you!’ replied the general. ‘Here is the rate of all their shares. Look at the sum total. What noble fortunes that would have made for half a dozen reasonable men. It went to my heart to fritter it away among so many,’—‘This! this the rate of their shares!’ said my master, not able to conceal his astonishment, when he looked at the paper which the other gave him. ‘It is possible that this should be all?’—‘Yes,’ returned the admiral, ‘and too much for them, too. More than most of them ever had before, or will make a good use of now.’—‘Why, they’ll mutiny, and cut all our throats,’ returned my master. ‘There are several of them, who owe me almost as much as this already. I thought they would have had ten times this sum at least. They’ll certainly mutiny, and cut all our throats.’—‘Don’t you give yourself any trouble about their mutinying!’ said the general. ‘Do you mind your business, and leave us to take care of that. Their spirits will hardly be so high! If you have gone hand over head, and trusted them so far, you must abide by the loss. I thought I gave you a friendly caution about that before.’—

‘And so,’ returned my master, ‘I am not to go beyond this rate, you say?’—‘Not a penny!’ answered the admiral. ‘That is your rule. Whatever you can beat down of that shall be your own. That is deducting five per cent. agency!’ interposed the general, ‘and five or ten per cent. as you can make your bargain, for prompt payment, for we will not appear to have any hand in the affair, further than paying you the money. It must not be known that we are concerned in the least.’—

‘You concerned!’ replied my master. ‘I don’t understand you. Are you to be concerned with me, in what I buy?’—‘Not in the least,’ returned the admiral; ‘any further than by employing you to act for us. You seem to mistake the matter entirely. You are to buy the shares for us, according to this rate, for which we will allow you a proper agency: and that is all the concern you are to have in the affair.’ ‘But I suppose,’ said my master, ‘I may buy on my own account, if I please!’ ‘Buy on your own account!’ interrupted the general. ‘Such another word, and you shall neither sell nor buy any thing here. Are not we the commander’s agents? And do you think they will suffer us to be interloped upon? You may be very well content with the profits of your own business, without thinking to interfere in our’s.’ ‘I ask your pardon, gentlemen?’ said my master, who knew their power too well to dispute with them.

It was only a mistake. I by no means presume to interfere with you; and shall be proud to execute your orders, on whatever terms you think proper. I suppose though our former composition is to end. Provisions will now come in from every part, so that we can never think of keeping them up at their former prices.’

'Can't you so?' answered the general. 'That shall be your own fault then; and your own loss too, I can tell you. Let provisions come in as they will, no one shall sell an ounce here without our permission, and that shall be on our own terms, you may be assured. Our hands are not tied up by laws. Our's is a military government, in which we can do what we please without being accountable to any one. So you may go on as before. But, gentlemen,' replied my master, 'you should consider that the whole odium of this will fall upon me, as you do not appear in it, so that I shall lose my character for ever.'

'Your character! ha! ha! ha!' interrupted the general, 'a sutler's character! I shall never be able to bear the word again! Pray, my good friend, what character had a sutler ever to lose, that would not be a greater loss to the finder? Come, here's my service to you. Go on with your business, and make money, and never fear suffering by the loss of your character. It is time for us to go, and settle what taxes we shall lay upon the different kinds of merchandise that shall be brought here. Our duties shall be paid, as well as those of anything of them all. This is our reign; and if we do not make the most of it, we have no one to blame but ourselves.'

'And as rich as so many kings you will be;' said my master, 'if you can carry off things in the manner you say.' 'As to our being rich!' returned the admiral, 'that depends entirely upon our own management. Our principals, indeed, will be rich enough, which is all they care for; not what becomes of us, whom they would have do their business for nothing, or next to it. But they shall

‘find themselves mistaken. Every thing must go through our hands; and gold in handling will stick to the fingers, as the song says. We shall feather our nests, in spite of them. They cannot do without us; and will hardly be fond of calling us to too strict an account for fear of our telling tales. To be sure, the great harvest will be their’s; but we will take toll.’ ‘I don’t doubt but you will,’ said my master, ‘twice over, for fear of mistake, as the miller does. Why you’ll make such fortunes that you won’t know what to do with yourselves.’ ‘Never fear that!’ answered the general. ‘We shall not be at a loss. For my part, I design to buy a borough, and push my fortune in parliament. That’s the genteeldest business a gentleman can follow now, and the readiest way of advancing in life, and making a family.’ ‘Now, I think otherwise,’ said the admiral, ‘and that it is the most ungenteel way; such dirty jobs are required for every thing a man gets, that it is beneath a gentleman to do them. My scheme is to buy an Irish peerage at once, and then live splendidly, without troubling myself about any thing. Or, if I should grow tired of idleness, go into parliament there, and turn patriot, and make speeches for the good of my country.’

‘Both your schemes may be very good!’ said my master, ‘but my ambition is not so high as either, at least as yet. I will try to get a contract; and then I shall not fear making a fortune sufficient to do what you propose, or more if I choose it, without being sneered at for my folly. You may say what you will, but there is more to be got by a contract than by every other way; and, therefore, it is the genteeldest in my opinion. How many contractors have I seen buy noblemen’s fine houses,

and members of parliament's estates, with the profits of a single campaign? And so, my lord, and you, most honourable Mr. Member, I am your humble servant.' 'Honest Mr. Contractor,' replied both at the same time, 'your's.'

CHAPTER LVI.

Affecting consequences of carrying the foregoing schemes into execution; with the conclusion of the character and history of Chrysal's master. Chrysal changes his service.

AS soon as this worthy pair had left my master, he set about his business of preying upon the necessities of every one who came near him, with as much keenness as a vulture tears a carrion, and with as little feeling, or he could never have gone through with it.

The transactions I now saw are a pain to memory. For the first few days after their success, the officers, under the same intoxication with my late master, the serjeant, gave a loose to every kind of extravagance, to compensate to themselves for the wants and hardships they had suffered. But no sooner had they advanced near the limits prescribed to their credit than the whole scene changed. The first mention of the amount of their respective shares was like a clap of thunder bursting over their heads. Their astonishment for some time deprived them of their senses. But when they were able to make a proper inquiry,

and found the case to be but too true, their rage broke through all bounds and rose almost to desperation. The horrors of a jail, the cries of a starving family, every aggravation of human misery stared them in the face, and made the very thought of returning to their native country too terrible to be endured. But there was no other remedy. Those from whom alone it could proceed, were too much interested to listen to their complaints; and, instead of preventing, permitted their authority to be prostituted to complete their ruin, in the manner proposed by their agents; so that the unhappy victims were forced to submit to the terms imposed upon them. The consequence of this, as I have said before, was that, to drown reflection, they spent whatever trifle remained to them on concluding the bargains which sealed their ruin in still greater excesses, and so precipitated the distress they feared. As for the private men, the impositions they suffered were, if possible, still severer (though from their insensibility perhaps not so severely felt) as the *management* of their affairs went through many more hands, every one of whom had a pull at them, down to the very lowest class of the harpies which prey upon an army, so that what remained to them was too trifling to be of any service, even to the very few who struggled with their necessities in order to save it.

I have not entered minutely into the particulars of this horrid scene. This slight sketch will give you a general notion of it, and that is as much as an humane heart can bear. Indeed, no description could reach the truth. I shall, therefore, only just finish the outlines of my master's character, and then pass on to the occurrences in my next service. The extortions to which he was himself forced to submit, from those in authority, took off every shadow

of shame (to conscience he had long been a stranger) and added double keenness to his natural propensity to extortion, by giving it what he thought the appearance of justice, and provoking him to wreak his resentment upon others, for what he suffered himself from those above his reach. The opportunities for exerting his talents this way were infinite in a profession that is a mystery of iniquity too complicated to be unravelled, too black to be conceived, but upon experience, which he had acquired to the most consummate degree, in the gradual progression of his life. A natural sharpness of genius, which ought to have been curbed, not encouraged, had influenced his parents to bind him, when very young, to an attorney, under whom he learned, besides other valuable qualifications, the nice distinctions, between law and justice, so as to know critically how far he could infringe upon the latter, without danger of getting within the reach of the former; but, encouraged by much success, he had at length unluckily happened to go too near those boundaries, and been obliged to quit that profession! after some common steps of descent from which, such as *bailiff's follower, knight of the post, and bully to a bawdy-house*, he stopped in that of footman to a beau, from which the necessary arts of *prevaricating, lying, and evading disagreeable demands*, the qualifications of his former character, soon raised him to be his *gentleman*. In this station he added to his stock of accomplishments, natural and acquired, *pimping, servility, adulation, and an absolute command of countenance*, on the strength of all which, together with some little money, the fruits of his honest industry, on his master's fixing his habitation in jail, he set up a tavern, where his *second-hand politeness, and cringing behaviour* soon brought him into business that enabled him to live better than he could have

any right to have expected, and would in time have procured him an independence.

This success, which would have satisfied a reasonable person, only raised his ambition, and made him despise his business. Accordingly, he commenced *wine-merchant*, as more suitable to a *gentleman*, in which profession he went on, till his *one-horse chaise*, his *country-house*, and *kept-mistress*, would have brought him back to his primitive poverty, had not his knowledge of the world taught him how to secrete from his creditors, something to try his hand upon in some other way, when he pitched upon his present occupation of a sutler, in which this account of his life shews he was most eminently fitted to make a figure. Thus qualified in himself, and supported by his employers, he proceeded making his bargains, with a success, to which it may be thought no regard to honesty, no sense of compassion, was the least impediment. He flattered, professed the highest respect and attachment, and pressed his goods upon his destined victims, with every insinuating art, till he got them into his snare, when he directly put on all the insolence of power, and made even ruin still more wretched by the cruelty with which he drove them to it: the insensibility with which he treated them after. How often have I seen him refuse to trust for a glass of what he called wine, to cool his raging thirst, and comfort his fainting heart, the man whom but a day or two before he had cajoled into the excesses which drew him into that distress. After some days of painful attention to such shocking scenes, I had the pleasure of being paid away to the captain of a merchant ship, for some liquors, of which he had the address to deceive the vigilance of the ruling powers, and all their emissaries, and convey *impost free* to my master.

CHAPTER LVII.

Chrysal's master swallows a pill, and pleads an important cause without success. A curious method of parrying one false oath by another, with the first oath taken by the master of a merchantman. He shews another instance of his skill in steering clear of perjury, but without his former success. Chrysal changes his service.

THE care which I knew to be taken to detect and punish this kind of illicit trade made me wonder at first that it should even be attempted; but I soon found that the danger of such detection when it depends solely on the confession of those concerned, however forceful the means made use of to extort that confession, is held at naught by a set of people, bred in the grossest ignorance of every principle of moral virtue or religious obligation, and hardened by long habit into contempt of whatever clashes with their interest. When I came into the possession of my new master, he was going to attend two *great men*, whose conversation with the sutler I have just now related, in obedience to a summons sent him the moment he entered the harbour. The reception he met with was suited to their importance. He was obliged to wait a considerable time, before they were at leisure to see him, when being admitted to their presence, and having delivered in his bill of lading, and *taken his oath*, that he had no *private trade* on board, nor any thing which

was not contained in that account; they informed him what *duties* he must pay on every article, before he should be permitted to land them.

My master, though he was sufficiently apprised of this before, affected surprise, and attempted to expostulate with them on the illegality and injustice of such a demand, alledging that the goods had been purchased at the highest prices, in order to send a speedy and effectual supply to the troops, who were known to want them, so that there could be no advance made upon them, which could defray such additional duties; that his owners, not in the least suspecting any such, had given him no power to pay them; and that many of the commodities, being of a perishable nature, must be damaged if not permitted to be landed directly, by which means not only the merchants would be great losers, but also the troops suffer severely for the want of common necessities, which they could not otherwise be supplied with. But all he could say had no effect, they did not even deign to make him any answer, further than that they had authority for what they did, and expected obedience, not arguments, which they had not leisure to listen to.

Such a repulse, however unjust in itself, and personally offensive in the manner of it, was far from giving my master any concern. On the contrary, the difficulties which it threw upon the business of his owners afforded him an opportunity of carrying on his own private trade to advantage, which no oaths they could devise were able to put a stop to, as an instance or two of his conduct will shew.

Some suspicion having arisen of his commerce with the sutler, of which no direct proof could be obtained, he was summoned to appear before the tax-gatherers,

to acquit himself by his oath of so heinous an offence. The sutler, who knew the consequence of being convicted, and with all his knowledge of the world saw no possibility of avoiding it, gave himself up as ruined : but my master soon shewed him the convenience of a conscience trained to swearing, for calling upon him the morning they were to appear at the dread tribunal, and seeing him so cast down, ‘Cheer up, brother,’ said he, ‘I’ll bring you safe through this strait ! By the virtue and contents of this book,’ pulling one out of his pocket, and kissing it in form, ‘I will never swear that you have bought any thing from me ; so throw off that sneaking, Tyburn look, and come along.’

Such an assurance naturally gave the sutler some spirits ; though he could not conceive how he meant to make it good ; but a little time cleared up the mystery, and shewed him the force of a custom-house oath. As soon as the two culprits appeared before their judges, the latter, assuming all the dignity of their office, exaggerated the charge in the strongest colours, and administering the oath to my master, demanded, in an authoritative tone, whether he had not sold *uncustomed* goods to the sutler, and to what amount ? who, not in the least disconcerted, either by the question, or the manner in which it was put, ‘Why look you, gentlemen,’ answered he, turning the quid in his cheek, and pulling up his breeches at the hips, with both his hands, ‘as to that affair, by the virtue of my oath, *if I should swear that I sold him any, I should be forsworn*, and I’ll always try to weather that point if I can.’

As there was no more than a general suspicion against the criminals, this answer satisfied the saga-

city of their judges, and they were dismissed with flying colours.

When they were alone, 'Well,' said my master, shaking his friend by the hand, 'I told you I would bring you off. Let that be an example to you for the future. *None but fools convict themselves, and none but greater fools expect it.* I should have little business in the merchant's service, if I scrupled to swallow such a pill as that every day of my life! No, no; they must be cunning if they can make an oath that will stick in the throat of the captain of a merchant-man, even if he can't find an opening to steer through, as was the case here. We have a *salvo* for such things. The first oath we take, as soon as we get into employment, is, *never to swear the truth to a custom-house officer while we live; so so that all the oaths they give us go for nothing.*'

But with all this cleverness he sometimes failed of success. A lieutenant of a man of war happening, as he was rowing guard one night, to see a boat put off from our ship, pursued it, as he knew it must be a smuggler. The crew, observing the lieutenant's boat gain fast upon them, and knowing it was impossible to escape, threw their cargo overboard, and ran the boat a-shore, to save themselves from being taken, leaving her to the captors, who towed her away in triumph.

The chief of the smugglers was my master's son, who, in the account he gave him of the affair on his return, was proceeding to tell him the names of those that were with him, but the father stopping him, cried, 'Avast! coil up your tongue; I desire to hear no more of them. Have you a mind to make me forswear myself when I go to recover my boat?—

‘for have her again you know I must, as I cannot get another here, nor carry on any business without one.’—Accordingly, next morning he made public inquiry after his boat, which he pretended had been stolen from his ship’s side, and finding her in the possession of the lieutenant, demanded to have her restored directly, and, on his refusal, had him summoned before the officers of the customs, who were judges in such affairs. As he grounded his claim on her having been taken away without his privity, and by persons unknown to him, he was put to the common test of an oath, whether he knew who was in her when she was pursued by the captors. ‘By the virtue of my oath, gentlemen,’ answered he, without the least hesitation, ‘*I do not know one of them.*’—So direct an answer satisfied the judges, who were no ways concerned in the affair; but that was not the case with the lieutenant: ‘Hold, sir,’ said he to my master, who was sheering off, laughing in his sleeve. ‘What is that you say?’ ‘I say,’ answered my master, nothing disconcerted, ‘that I don’t know *one of them.*’ ‘*One of them!*’ returned the lieutenant, who instantly saw through the evasion. ‘But do you know *any* of them? Take care what you say? Perhaps I know more than you think I do.’ ‘Why as to that,’ replied my master, laughing, ‘I cannot say so much. Perhaps I may know some of them.’ ‘How!’ interposed the judge, offended at an answer which he thought shewed a slight of his authority. ‘Did not you swear, this moment, that you did not know one of them.’ ‘Nor do I:’ answered my master. ‘There were twelve in the boat, of whom I know only eleven; and sure, in that case, I can safely swear I do not know *one*, that is, *the twelfth* of them. Ha! ha! ha!’ ‘Take care, sir,’ replied the judge, ‘how you trifle before us

'again. You know the punishment of perjury, you should be caught tripping !'

'Never fear,' said my master, 'I know the compass of my conscience too well for that. *Thus ! thus ! and no nearer !* is my trim. I'll never break an oath ; but if I can give it the *go by*, at the *leeward* thus, by a double meaning, I hope that's no offence.' Then turning to the lieutenant, 'Well sir,' continued he, 'it seems *you have carried too much sail for me this trip, but if I meet you upon a wind again, mind your helm or I may chance to fall aboard you.* However, since I cannot have my boat cheaper, I muste'en come to your terms, so what do you ask for it ?' To this proposal the lieutenant made no objection : setting, therefore, his price, my master paid him for the boat, and then walked off without concern or shame. I here quitted his service, of which I was heartily tired, and entered into that of the lieutenant.

CHAPTER LVIII.

Chrysal makes some reflections on the policy of imposing oaths of exculpation. The proper method of preserving the validity of oaths, with the consequences of their being administered indiscriminately to all persons, and on all occasions. An uncommon lecture from a captain of a man of war to his officers represents some polite amusements in an odd light.

I SEE you are shocked at such flagrant instances of profligacy, of bare-faced contempt of every thing most sacred and important. They certainly are a reproach to human nature; but that reproach must not be confined to those alone who obviously incur it. They who from false principles of policy gave the occasion, against the conviction of reason and experience, are at least equally guilty.

The impotency of man to resist temptation is such, that he is taught to pray against it! Why then should those, who are intrusted with the care of directing his actions in the common intercourse of life, lay snares to lead him into it, which there is no probability of his avoiding? Appealing to the attestation of the Deity, is most certainly the highest assurance possible to be given by any being, who has a sense of his dependence on that Deity; nor

should ever be given but on the most important occasions, and in the most solemn manner; nor accepted but from such as may be presumed to understand the nature of it. In such circumstances it would never be violated. Man is not so desperately abandoned as to run with his eyes open into inexplicable perdition. But when that attestation is given lightly for every trifle, when it is placed in opposition to interest, and demanded from such as cannot be supposed to know its consequence, the reverence which should be its guard is taken off, the violation becomes familiar, and, of course, the end, for which it is thus impiously and injudiciously prostituted, disappointed; and by that means the most sacred assurance of life rendered void, the bond of social confidence and safety broken.

The effects of this absurd policy of making the obligations of religion the common test of truth on trivial occasions and where interest is concerned, are more extensive than is generally imagined. The immediate wants of nature engross the attention of the greater part of mankind too much to let them see the congruity of moral virtue, however evident to exerted reason; wherefore, the threats and promises of religion were found necessary to enforce the practice of it: but as the accomplishment of those is placed at a distance, when they interfere with present enjoyments, their force wears off, the threats lose their terrors, and the promises are slighted by those who look no farther than the instant moment: and this is the great source of that immorality and irreligion so prevalent in life, and which will never be corrected, *till legislators make oaths less common, prevent their interfering with the swearer's own interest, as in the instances which gave occasion to these reflections, explain their nature before they*

are administered, and inflict instant punishment on their violation.

My new master had but just returned on board, when the captain received orders to go and assist the operations of the war in another part of the world. The news raised every one's spirits. The sight of a place in which most of them had been guilty of excesses which drew them into distress, and where all had been so wretchedly disappointed, was necessarily disagreeable ; and consequently a removal to another, where a new object attracted their attention from such reflections, and awoke new hopes, however likely to end in the same manner as the former, gave them pleasure.

There was a decency in the behaviour of both men and officers in this ship, so very different from what I had seen in others, as to strike me with an agreeable surprise. But I was not long at a loss for the reason. As soon as the ship was under sail, the captain summoned all his officers into the great cabin, and after some general instructions about their duty, 'gentlemen,' said he, addressing himself to my master, and another, who had been but lately appointed to his ship, 'as we have never sailed together before, I must desire your attention to a few hints, which I always take the liberty to give in such circumstances. We are now shut up together in a prison, where the unavoidable inconveniences of our situation make all our care necessary to prevent its becoming insupportable to us. For this reason, the first thing I recommend to you is, not to game. Beside the danger of disagreement when the passions are agitated by the vicissitudes of play, our pay is scarce sufficient for our support, so that the least loss must be distressing, the consequence

‘ of which must be general unhappiness, for who
‘ can see his companion miserable, without sharing
‘ in his misery ? There is another thing, against
‘ which, though not commonly considered in this
‘ light, I must earnestly caution you, as inevitably
‘ throwing a gloom over that cheerfulness of mind,
‘ which is the greatest happiness of life, and to us
‘ must supply the place of every other happiness,
‘ and this is the vice of profane cursing and swear-
‘ ing, to the reproach of our service, too prevalent
‘ among us.’

‘ There is no man, nowever hardened in this
‘ detestable habit, but knows it to be a crime, and feels
‘ a check from within every time he is guilty of it,
‘ the repetition of which self-accusation sours his
‘ temper, and makes him dissatisfied with himself,
‘ and every person and thing about him. For the
‘ truth of this I appeal to unvaried experience. Who
‘ ever saw a man serenely cheerful, that was addicted
‘ to this vice ? (I might say indeed to any vice, but as
‘ our situation precludes us from the practice of most
‘ others, I mention these only into which we may
‘ fall) for occasional mirth is a very different thing,
‘ and too often leads into consequences destructive
‘ of serenity of mind, especially when it is raised by
‘ means inconsistent with virtue.

‘ I do not speak of the effect which the practice of
‘ virtue has upon our resolution. The courage of
‘ a Briton can never be doubted; but still there is
‘ as much difference between that of a virtuous and
‘ a vicious man, as of the same person when sober, or
‘ intoxicated with liquor. The former is uniform,
‘ steady, and attentive to improve every advantage,
‘ or remedy any misfortune; the other, boisterous,
‘ headlong, and blinded with passion; for passion

only can make a man face death, who in the cool moment of reflection is afraid to die. In a word, one is the courage of a man, the other the rashness of a brute. Against these two things, therefore gaming and swearing, I take the liberty to caution you, as a friend, who is sincerely desirous of your welfare; but there is another vice, in respect to which I do not think myself obliged to observe the same delicacy, and this is *drunkenness*, which is liable to be attended with such dangerous consequences in our situation in particular, for I think it unnecessary to mention any other, that I shall ever exert all the authority entrusted to me to suppress it, and therefore it is but just for me to declare, that no officer, who is once guilty of it under my command, shall ever do duty under me more.'

'This, gentlemen, is what I had to say to you. The observation of these few hints will make us happy among ourselves, and respected by our men, without which it is impossible for us to be well obeyed by them; for, heedless and profligate as they may appear, they are the severest critics on the conduct of their officers, and not only like people in higher stations, revere the virtues which they have not resolution to imitate, but also actually do imitate them in a great degree.'

END OF THE SECOND VOLUME.

H. Dean, Printer,
Kingsland.



1

1

2

3

4

5

6



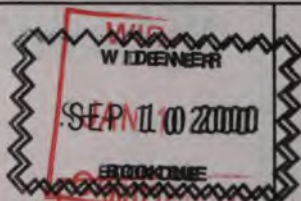
3 2044 055 328 991

This book should be returned to
the Library on or before the last date

The borrower must return this item on or before
the last date stamped below. If another user
places a recall for this item, the borrower will
be notified of the need for an earlier return.

*Non-receipt of overdue notices does **not** exempt
the borrower from overdue fines.*

Harvard College Widener Library
Cambridge, MA 02138 617-495-2413



Please handle with care.
Thank you for helping to preserve
libra

